



Harold Lerch, Sr. P.E.

# God's People, God's Plan


Why should we believe the Bible is true?

Does science disprove the Bible?

Is the promise of a Messiah false hope?

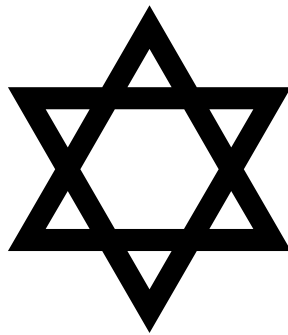
Has He come? Will He come?

How can peace come to the Middle East?





# God's People, God's Plan



The Scriptures, inspired by God, are true and accurate. Moses recorded these writings as the infallible Word of the infallible God.

After the creation, first sin, and fall of man, God chose His people and made a covenant with them. His people have often forgotten Him; but God has not forgotten **God's People**. There is much ahead to complete **God's Plan**.

#### Word to the World Ministries



Harold A. Lerch, Sr. P.E.

Middleburg PA 17842

Web [www.word2world.com](http://www.word2world.com)

E-mail [HalLerch88@gmail.com](mailto:HalLerch88@gmail.com)

Copyright © 2002 by Harold A. Lerch, Sr., P.E.  
Publisher Harold A. Lerch, Sr. P.E.

God's People, God's Plan  
By Harold A. Lerch, Sr., P.E.

Revised © 2018 by Harold A. Lerch, Sr., P.E.

All rights reserved solely by the author. The author guarantees the contents are original and do not infringe upon the legal rights of any other person or work. No part of this book may be reproduced in any form without the permission of the author. The views expressed in this book are necessarily those of the publisher.

Unless otherwise indicated, Bible quotations are taken from the Authorized King James Version, Public Domain.

Other references include:

THE REVISED STANDARD VERSION OF THE BIBLE. Copyright © 1946, 1952, 1971 by Division of Christian Education of the National Council Churches of Christ in the USA, and used by permission.

SIMPLE ENGLISH® BIBLE NEW TESTAMENT. Copyright © 1978, 1980 (International Edition), by International Bible Translators, Inc. Copyright © 1981 (American Edition) by International Bible Translators, Inc., all rights reserved.

THE LIVING BIBLE. Copyright © 1971 by Tyndale House Publishers, Wheaton, IL. Used by permission.

NEW JERUSALEM BIBLE WITH APOCRYPHA. Copyright © 1990 by Darton, Longman & Todd Limited and Doubleday, a division of Bantam Doubleday Dell Publishing Group, Inc. All rights reserved. Published by arrangement with Doubleday, a division of Bantam Doubleday Dell Publishing Group, Inc.

AMERICAN STANDARD VERSION New American Standard Bible © copyright 1960 1962 1963 1968 1971 1972 1973 1975 1977 1988 by the Lockman Foundation. All rights reserved.

NEW INTERNATIONAL VERSION. Scripture taken from the Holy Bible, New International Version®, Copyright © 1973, 1978 1984 by International Bible society. Used by permission of Zondervan Publishing House. All rights reserved. The NIV and New International Version

trademarks are registered in the US patent and trademark office by International Bible Society. Use of either trademark requires the permission of International Bible Society.

Biblical texts and clip art were excerpted from:

THE BIBLE LIBRARY CD-ROM DISC. Copyright © 1988, 2000 by ELLIS ENTERPRISES, Inc., Oklahoma City, Oklahoma. All rights reserved. The contents of The Bible Library CD-ROM disc may not be used for sale or electronic exchange or transmission without the express written consent of ELLIS ENTERPRISES, Inc., and, where applicable, the individual owners of copyrighted material on the disc.

## Mission Statement

This book is written for Jews who want to learn about the foundations that under gird their faith, beginning with the creation, and how one's belief regarding origins should affect our daily lives six thousand years later. The author writes in a unique style intended to provide both enjoyable reading and challenging content. Scripture passages are included within the text to help make the Biblical integration most effective.

The author is a Christian that recognizes that Christians and Jews worship the same Creator God, and that the Jews are part of God's master plan from the beginning unto the fulfillment of all prophecy. The author explains why Christians accept Jesus Christ as the Messiah, and why the hope for the future is from God and through the Messiah. The foundation of the Christian faith is that the Messiah has already come and become the Redeemer of sins for all time, and will return to conquer Satan and all our enemies. Those who accept Him as our Redeemer will abide with the Conqueror forever.

## Contact information

### Word to the World Ministries



Harold A. Lerch, Sr. P.E.

Middleburg PA 17842

Web [www.word2world.com](http://www.word2world.com)

E-mail [HalLerch88@gmail.com](mailto:HalLerch88@gmail.com)

## Dedication

The author dedicates this book to his parents, the late Pearl Lerch and the late Ralph H. Lerch. It was in his parent's home that the author learned that the Jews are God's chosen people, and are true friends of the Christians.



# TABLE OF CONTENTS

Mission Statement and Dedication	5
Acknowledgments	7
Foreword	8
Introduction	10

## PART I THE CREATOR

Chapter 1. The Breath of Life	12
Chapter 2. Out of Eve, Out of Ararat	22
Chapter 3. Can the Bible and Science Compromise?	31

## PART II THE MESSIAH

Chapter 4. Was a Messiah Promised?	45
Chapter 5. Is Jesus Christ the Messiah?	53

## PART III THE EFFECT OF A CREATOR GOD ON OUR DAILY LIVES

Chapter 6. God's View: Does It Matter What We Believe?	66
Chapter 7. Abortion: Which Children Should Live?	76
Chapter 8. Homosexuality: Adam and Eve, or Adam and Steve?	83
Chapter 9. Marriage & Divorce: Till Death Do Us Part	89
Chapter 10. Racism & Prejudice	97

## PART IV WHERE ARE WE GOING FROM HERE?

Chapter 11. Eternity: Is There an Afterlife?	106
Chapter 12. Should Churches Keep Up With the Times?	118
Chapter 13. The Covenant and Promises	123
Chapter 14. Why Have God's People Suffered?	129

## PART V DEPART IN PEACE

Chapter 15. Satan: The Enemy	140
Chapter 16. Summary & Conclusion	145
Appendix A: Biblical Creation & Evolution Scriptures	154
Appendix B: The Messiah and His Purpose Scriptures	158
Appendix C: The Messiah, Salvation, Angels, Heaven, Eternal Life	169
Appendix D: The Bible on Daily Living	175
Appendix E: Chosen People and the Covenant Scriptures	182
Outline	190
Recommended Reading	193



# ACKNOWLEDGMENTS

The Creator God.

My Father for his shared enthusiasm in creation science, and for his example of unselfish service to the Lord.

Thank you, Mom, for the hours and hours you spent checking my accuracy and Bible references. My mother taught me the scriptures 45 years ago, and continues today. I would be so proud if I could say that I measured up to Mom and Dad!

Answers in Genesis<sup>1</sup> for their tireless research and publishing of solid scientific information, and to Ken Ham, Executive Director of AIG, Mark Looy, Founding Director, and staff in presenting the facts (truth) in such a way that even I can understand.

I acknowledge the early influence in my life by the Reverend Harold Snider, pastor during the first nine years at the church I attended from infancy to manhood. Mrs. Snider taught me in junior church. Reverend Snider wrote the first commentary I ever read on the Bible book now becoming so important to me. Some chapter titles Rev. Snider selected are “Cain’s Wife,” “The Years of the Patriarchs,” “The Antediluvian (pre-flood) Diet,” and “How Many Animals.” It is the first book that presented the ice age to me in a way that made sense. The title, *That Amazing Book- Genesis!*<sup>2</sup>

Perhaps I am the only Christian who has his own rabbi. My friend, Shelley Kolbert, is one of the most knowledgeable men I know on the Hebrew Bible (Old Testament). I think he knows more about the New Testament than most Christians. Shelley critically reviewed this book’s contents and syntax so that perhaps it will be readable. Shelley made me think about what I was writing through many deep spiritual discussions.

Thank you Jeanne for the moral support you gave your husband while he was glued to a computer writing this book.

I am grateful to my uncle, Edwin M. Lerch, who suggested many scriptures that have been inserted throughout the book.

A big Thank You to my son-in-law, Dylan Sloneem, who custom built and continually upgraded my computer, and fixed it when I broke it.



---

<sup>1</sup> Answers in Genesis, PO Box 6330, Florence, KY 41022 USA  
Answers in Genesis, PO Box 6302, Acacia Ridge DC, Qld 4110 Australia  
Answers in Genesis, PO Box 5262, Leicester LE2 3XU, United Kingdom  
Answers in Genesis, PO Box 39005, Howick, Auckland, New Zealand  
Answers in Gen., 5-420 Erb St. W., Suite 213, Waterloo, Ontario N2L 6K6 Canada  
<sup>2</sup> Snider, Harold, *That Amazing Book- Genesis!*, Hicksville, NY, Exposition Press, 1977.

## FOREWORD

He has made everything beautiful in its time; also he has put eternity into man's mind. (Ecclesiastes 3:11a RSV)

*<sup>12</sup>How art thou fallen from heaven, O Lucifer, son of the morning! how art thou cut down to the ground, which didst weaken the nations! <sup>13</sup>For thou hast said in thine heart, I will ascend into heaven, I will exalt my throne above the stars of God: I will sit also upon the mount of the congregation, in the sides of the north: <sup>14</sup>I will ascend above the heights of the clouds; I will be like the most High. <sup>15</sup>Yet thou shalt be brought down to hell, to the sides of the pit. (Isaiah 14:12-16)*

I am convinced that the Bible is true, beginning with the creation account of Genesis chapters 1 and 2. I also believe it follows that the remainder of the Bible is the authoritative word of God as recorded for us by Moses and others.

As a boy, I heard outside my home and church about concepts such as evolution; Noah's flood was local, not worldwide; dinosaurs existed long ages ago, outside of the time frame of the Bible, and; that maybe there was a prior creation that God destroyed before re-creating. No doubt you have noticed the struggle over the creation/evolution issue that has been brewing the past 100 years or so. One might wonder about the significance of the issue.

The importance is that creation is the foundation of the entire Judeo-Christian faith. Simply, if God made us, He owns us. He has the right to dictate the morality standards. He alone has the authority to judge us. Further, if the creation account is merely fable, what of the remainder of the Bible is true? What about First Sin (temptation of Eve by the serpent, and Adam by Eve), judgment of the entire earth by water (Noachian Flood), and by fire (Sodom and Gomorrah)? What of the laws and our need for obedience, and most importantly- redemption?

I did not believe any of the evolutionary theories I heard in school. I thought that if any one were true, the Bible would verify it. But who is really to know? I came to find that God *has* revealed the Truth to us. The information is here on earth right in front of our noses. Our faith need not be blind:

My Father and I enjoyed for many years discussing quandaries concerning the theory of evolution. Neither of us had degrees in science, though I am a professional engineer. However, we both did have some common sense. We would ponder how an eye could evolve when there are so many complex parts that must function together: lens, cornea, retina, optic nerve, and so on. If one component is missing, the others are useless. So how would Mother Nature click her fingers and make all those components happen at once, in both members of a mating pair, so their offspring could have eyes? And how could virtually the same design appear in so many of the kinds of animals? The common sense conclusion is that nature is the work of a designer, not the product of time and chance.

These discussions went on for years. Then during one Sunday afternoon visit, Dad told me that there are scientists who claim that there is a large body of evidence that points toward Biblical creation. This was exciting news to me, and it was news that fueled our Sunday chats.

A year or so later during, another visit with Dad, he popped a tape into the VCR and played a lecture by one of these Creation scientists. In fact, Dad had a set of ten videos from this gentleman's organization. I took the tapes home and watched them all. The information was



incredible. The scientific evidence presented fit a “special creation model,” not an “evolution model.”

A year or so later, Dad told me that one of the scientists on the videotapes, Dr. Gary Parker, would soon be speaking at his church. I went to hear Dr. Parker there, and one year later for five nights at a church near my home. He is a wonderful speaker and author. Importantly, he is a paleontologist that, in his own words says, “creation is a faith the facts fit, evolution is a faith the facts fail.” Since that time, I have also attended presentations by the executive director of this organization, Mr. Ken Ham. I have enjoyed many of their books and videos, and their magazine *Creation ex nihilo*. Ex nihilo is Latin for “out of nothing.”

I made a “great discovery” when I realized that what others believe really does matter. I have learned that what I believed all my life about Biblical creation is true; that everything there is or ever was had come about just as told in Genesis chapters 1 and 2. The evidence that is everywhere supports special Creation. Furthermore, I learned that our entire Judeo-Christian foundation was laid in Genesis.

An article in *Creation* magazine<sup>3</sup> helped me see this relevance. The article was of a former well-known evangelist, Charles Templeton. Charles Templeton, with all his fire for God, and all his knowledge, eventually became convinced that science had proven evolution to be true. Therefore, the Bible was a lie, in his opinion. Ultimately, he wrote a book, the title and subtitle of which tell the story: *Farewell to God, My Reasons for Rejecting the Christian Faith*. The likeness of a sweet-looking senior citizen graces the cover.

As if the Charles Templeton tragedy were not enough reason for alarm, I had another recent astounding experience. I had the opportunity to speak to a theologian from a Christian college. I asked what their official position was on creation vs. evolution. His answer was that they believe that God is the Creator, and that He did it using evolution. I told him that I had good news for him. I told him that the facts better fit the concept of a creator. I sent him literature and a note with more good news for the students; they only need to learn 6000 years of events, not billions of years.

What you believe does matter, and this applies to many more subjects than to our origins.

Harold A. Lerch, Sr. P.E.



---

<sup>3</sup> *Creation ex nihilo* vol. 22 no. 3., Answers in Genesis, Florence KY 41022

## Introduction

In a high school math class, our teacher introduced the next topic of study by asking, “What is the square root of minus four.” Silence. Silence kills me, so I replied, “2i.” Mr. Houser refused to acknowledge my answer, and iterated the question. Of course, I could not remain silent and repeated my prior answer, “2i.” Mr. Houser got angry with me and replied, there is no square root of minus 4.” (Then why did he ask?)

If you are a golden oldie and can remember as far back as high school, the square root of a number, when multiplied results in the original number. A positive times a positive results in a positive product. A negative times a negative also results in a positive. The only solution to Mr. Houser’s answer was either; there is no square “root,” or “2i”- two-imaginary.

We had not been taught about imaginary numbers yet- we were about to learn. Therefore, the answer as far as we knew should have been, “none.” I knew about imaginary numbers because I read ahead. What kind of nut would read ahead in a math text?

The point of this recollection is that we can’t know the future unless we read ahead.

Over 2000 years ago, we had the Bible in some form including The Law, History, Poetry and Wisdom, and Prophecy. Since I am a Christian, I accept the New Testament writings in addition to the Hebrew Bible as the infallible word of God, in fulfillment of the prophecies. Therefore, many scriptures in this text used to support the Laws of God are from the New Testament. Christians believe the Book of Revelation is also prophecy, and references from that book are taken as well. To me it is as if I read ahead, as in math class.

I previously wrote a sister book to this one entitled *Did God Really Say That?*<sup>4</sup> The original title of that book was to be “*Does it Really Matter What We Believe?*” The following is a partial listing of the basis for that book:

- God loves us. Does what we believe really matter?
- Would God eternally condemn “good” people to an eternal punishment?
- Isn’t it enough just to believe something?
- You have to remember that the Bible was written long ago. These are changing times, different times. We must be tolerant of the changes and of the rights of others. The church must change, also. Biblical positions on homosexuality, abortion, marriage, and divorce are just not valid anymore.
- Does where we came from matter? What is the difference if God made us or we evolved? Why can’t science, schools, and church just leave each other alone on the subject of origins?

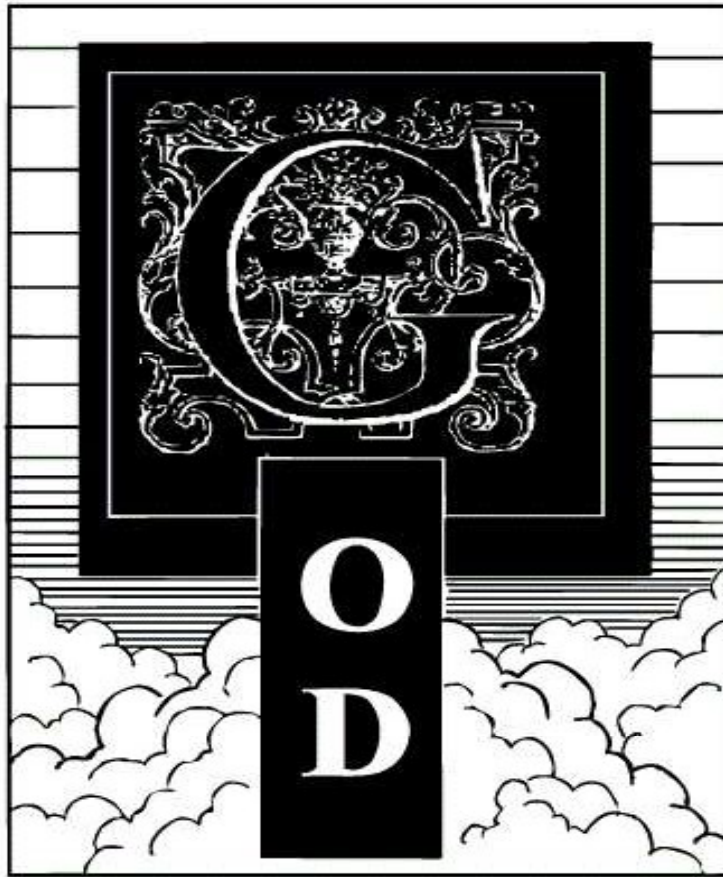
The book you are reading was originally entitled *You Can Trust the Bible!* The premise was the same, plus the task of a Christian attempting a case to the Jews that Jesus Christ is the Messiah.



---

<sup>4</sup> Lerch, Harold, *Did God Really Say That?*, Fairfax, Virginia, Xulon Press, 2002.

## PART I THE CREATOR



But ask the beasts, and they will teach you; the birds of the air, and they will tell you; or the plants of the earth, and they will teach you; and the fish of the sea will declare to you. Who among all these does not know that the hand of the Lord has done this? In his hand is the life of every living thing and the breath of all mankind.  
Job 12:7-10 RSV.

# Chapter 1. The Breath of Life



<sup>1</sup>In the beginning God created the heaven and the earth. <sup>2a</sup>And the earth was without form, and void; and darkness was upon the face of the deep. <sup>3</sup>And God said, Let there be light: and there was light. <sup>5</sup>And God called the light Day, and the darkness He called Night. And the evening and the morning were the first day.

<sup>7a</sup>And God made the firmament. <sup>8</sup>And God called the firmament Heaven. And the evening and the morning were the second day.

<sup>9a</sup>And God said, Let the waters under the heavens be gathered together. <sup>10</sup>And God called the dry land Earth; and the gathering together of the waters called He Seas. <sup>11a</sup>And God said, Let the earth bring forth vegetation. <sup>13</sup>And the evening and the morning were the third day.

<sup>14</sup>And God said, Let there be lights in the firmament of the heaven to divide the day from the night; and let them be for signs, and for seasons, and for days, and years; <sup>16</sup>And God made two great lights; the greater light to rule the day, and the lesser light to rule the night: he made the stars also. <sup>17a</sup>And God set them in the firmament <sup>18a</sup>to rule over the day and over the night. <sup>19</sup>And the evening and the morning were the fourth day.

<sup>20a</sup>And God said, Let the waters bring forth abundantly the moving creature that hath life, and fowl that may fly above the earth. <sup>21a</sup>And God created great sea monsters, and every living creature that moveth, which the waters brought forth abundantly, after their kind, and every



winged fowl after its kind.<sup>22a</sup> And God blessed them and said, Be fruitful and multiply. <sup>23</sup> And the evening and the morning were the fifth day.

<sup>24a</sup> And God said, Let the earth bring forth the living creature after its kind, cattle, and creeping things. <sup>26a</sup> And God said, Let us make man in our image, after our likeness; and let them have dominion...over the earth. <sup>27</sup> So God created man in His own image, in the image of God created He him; male and female created he them. <sup>29a,c</sup> And God said, Behold, I have given you every herb...and fruit... for food. <sup>30a,c</sup> And to every beast...and fowl...and thing that creepeth...wherein there is life, I have given every green herb for food. <sup>31b</sup> And the evening and the morning were the sixth day.

<sup>2</sup> And on the seventh day God ended his work which he had made; and he rested on the seventh day from all his work which he had made. <sup>3a</sup> And God blessed the seventh day, and sanctified it. (Genesis Chapter 1, Genesis 2:2-3a)

Thou, even thou, art Lord alone; thou hast made heaven, the heaven of heavens, with all their host, the earth, and all things that are therein, the seas, and all that is therein, and thou preservest them all; and the host of heaven worshippeth thee. (Nehemiah 9:6).

O Lord of hosts, God of Israel, that dwellest between the Cherubims, thou art the God, even thou alone, of all the kingdoms of the earth: thou hast made heaven and earth. (Isaiah 37:16).

## BLIND FAITH?

*I have made the earth, and created man upon it: I, even my hands, have stretched out the heavens, and all their host have I commanded.* (Isaiah 45:12).

Since the time that Charles Darwin first pondered the origins of life while voyaging through the Galapagos Islands off the coast of Ecuador, the world populace has had to wrestle with the evolution versus creation quandary. Gradually “molecules-to-man” evolution has replaced creationism as the popular belief in the secular world, and unfortunately, in large part in the Judeo-Christian world. Evolution is now taught as scientific fact in our schools. It is the assumption behind the narratives of nearly all nature documentaries on television, and in magazines and movies. In this way it is taught to our children from their early days, right through college biology, and well into the couch-potato years. It has become the mainstream of conviction, persuading that anyone believing contrary is a quaint lunatic.

The science behind evolution is very complicated. It really does take years to become modestly learned in the evolutionary field. To get the full picture, one must consider information from many different fields; paleontology (the study of fossils), biology, geology, physics, nuclear physics, anatomy, genetics, and many other related fields. No one field dares to feign having all the answers. Let us not lose sight of the fact that evolution is a theory. A theory is only good until it is disproved once.

Creation, on the other hand, can be a comparatively simple concept. The belief is, or was prior to rise of evolutionary thought, that God made everything in six days, rested on the seventh day, and here we are. There is not much to that. So at the limited number of schools that do allow teaching of creation, it need not take very long to present this point of view.

Many of us now have taken compromise positions on creationism and evolution, for one

reason to not look “ridiculous” to the rest of the world, and to accommodate for the Bible not to being in conflict with commonly accepted scientific thinking. In fact, the term “blind faith” is probably used with God and creation more than for any other circumstance. Is it really blind faith?

Ah Lord God! behold, thou hast made the heaven and the earth by thy great power and stretched out arm, and there is nothing too hard for thee: (Jeremiah 32:17).

## BILL AND BOB

Consider a mock conversation between friends Bob and Bill:

**Bob:** *I do not understand how anyone can believe that God made everything in six days like the fairy tale in the Bible.*

**Bill:** It is not a fairy tale. I have my reasons for believing what I read in the Bible.

**Bob:** *Yeah. Like all of you religious guys. I do not mean to belittle you, and I certainly do not want to hurt your feelings, but come on, facts are facts.*

**Bill:** That is right. I do believe the facts.

**Bob:** *Come on. I have asked your friends about Bible stuff. They tell me they believe the Bible because they believe in God. They call it “blind faith.”*

**Bill:** I do not call it blind faith, Bob, and I am sorry that some of my friends do. To the contrary, I would call evolutionary thinking blind faith. It is true that I believe God’s word in its entirety, but let us talk about believing in facts.

**Bob:** *I do not see where you are going. The facts are proven by science, and the facts have nothing to do with God or creation.*

**Bill:** That is where you are wrong. Look at the facts. Look at fossils. Did you ever see a living fossil? No. Fossils exist now, not in the past. They show something that was. They do not change, and do not show anything changing. In many places around the world the fossil record is upside down. Further, how could dead animals lay on the ground for long periods, and then be covered with earth and fossilize before they decayed? Do you call a scientist’s belief in evolution from fossil evidence science?

**Bob:** *Well, no one scientist has all the answers. You have to consider the information gathered by a number of different scientists. Like a puzzle, each having a piece.*

**Bill:** Yes, they each have a piece. They put them together and add them up to fit their predetermined model. In other words, the scientists take evolution by blind faith.

**Bob:** *I do not know enough about any of this to argue with you. How did you get so smart, anyway? Did you make all this up?*

**Bill:** I did not make it up, but it is interesting to know that you trust in scientists to make decisions for you about a subject you do not know much about. A group of scientists, real scientists, came to the local high school one evening and presented the evidence for creationism. I have read some of their books and have seen some of their videos. One scientist, Dr. Gary Parker from Answers in Genesis, explained that “creation is a faith the facts fit, and evolution is a faith the facts fail.” Ken Ham, scientist and executive director of Answers in Genesis, answered every one of our tough questions on creation and evolution, including those meant to cast doubt on the Bible. (Dr. Parker was formerly a full time speaker and associate of Answers in Genesis, and is now working at AiG on a part time basis.)

This mock conversation reflects a common problem. The world is ready to accept the scientific model, “what science says,” true or not, myth, legend, or fact, as long as an expert said it. By the way, one definition of an expert is “someone who comes from far away that gets paid a lot of money.” Also, “no prophet is accepted in his own country.”

## THEY CAN'T BOTH BE RIGHT

Why do the heathen rage, and the people imagine a vain thing? (Psalms 2:1).

I recently had a conversation with a medical doctor. I do not know anything about his personal life or religious background, but I do know he is a good doctor. He is a specialist, and on the wall at his office was a diagram showing a complicated organ about which he is expert. I pointed to the chart and asked, “Evolution or design?” Not knowing my angle, the doctor tried to dodge the question. Upon my pressing for an off-the-record answer, he said, “A lot of people have sat down and discussed this issue. The majority seems to think that evolution is the answer.” He added, “I guess it’s whatever you believe in.” He must have a good bedside manner.

We can go round and round with our fallible minds and debate both sides of the issues. One might think he has the incontestable proof; that the other side has to concede. But remember, each side examines the facts from their predetermined belief system, or bias. Ken Ham, in his question and answer book with the intriguing title *Did Adam Have a Belly Button*,<sup>5</sup> related the following:

“I’ve had lots of people over the years say that if we could only find Noah’s ark, then we could convince people the Bible’s true.”

Mr. Ham continues, “I’m reminded of a professor who once said to me after I spoke at a secular (non-Christian) college- ‘I don’t care if they do find a big boat on the top of Mt. Ararat and drag it down Main Street, I still won’t believe it’s Noah’s ark.’”

“At another meeting, a man said to me, ‘Who’s to say some priests didn’t build a big boat on Mt. Ararat because they wanted people to believe the story in the Bible.’”

How can two intelligent people examine the same facts and result in diametric conclusions? It is a fact to look at a fossil and say, “This is a fossil.” It is non factual to look at a fossil and determine what year it lived and died, what color its skin was, etc. The examiner fills in the intangibles. A Christian might look at a fossil and estimate that it lived 5000 years ago based on belief that the period of creation was 6000 years ago. A scientist-evolutionist might examine the same fossil and conclude that the animal lived millions of years ago because of how that would fit within their evolutionary time frame (and perhaps because of the faulty dating methods used). Both cannot be right.

For one thing, remember that we do have imperfect minds. Even the most qualified of scientists, regardless of faith, has a fallible mind. Neither was there when The Beginning

---

<sup>5</sup> Ham, Ken, *Did Adam Have a Belly Button?*” Green Forest, Arkansas, Master Books, 1999, p. 43.

happened. This does give those faithful to God a leg-up, or should, because of their belief that there was an eye witness, an infallible eye witness, who did what He did and had it all plainly recorded for us. Of course, a non-Jew or non-Christian won't believe this. What is our excuse?

Some of us are duped into saying that the Bible is wrong because the mortal scientists who weren't there at the start, who don't know what happened, who don't know how it happened, who don't believe in God, have said they proved their theory using their corrupt human brains, their unsound methods, and their fallible equipment.

Note: The previously referenced book, *Did Adam Have a Belly Button*, by Ken Ham, is an excellent book that answers 185 tough FAQs. The same author, with Andrew Snelling and Carl Wieland, wrote another excellent answer book called *The Answers Book*<sup>6</sup>, addressing "the twelve most asked questions on Genesis and creation/evolution."

The correct answer to evolution/creation is of course that God did it in six days. What about the evidence, though? Does it support one or the other, and does it matter?

## THE CREATION ACCOUNT

The one thing above all others that leads me to believe in a "special creation" by a Creator God, no matter what else the Bible says, or how the Bible is interpreted, or what any science books say for or against anything, is contained in the following: And the Lord formed man of the dust of the ground, **and breathed into his nostrils the breath of life**; and man became a living soul. (Genesis 2:7).

The "breath of life" is a very special phrase. When any human or animal dies, all the parts are there. Every molecule is there. The "programming" (DNA- blueprint for life) is there. So if the body was alive one minute ago, why can it not be resurrected? Sometimes we can restore a missing function, like a stopped heart, and "kick-start" it; but, for all other cases the body is missing "the breath of life." Only God has been able to provide the fundamental essence, "the breath of life."

I suppose this is a tough pill to swallow if you are a scientist. It is too simple. Well, creation can be a *very* simple concept if you are a Christian or a Jew:

- The Bible is God's Word based on one's belief of self-evidence.
- God means what he says, based on God's Word and the preceding point?
- He created everything there is in six days and rested on the seventh.

- Day 1. Created the heavens, earth, and light. (And time!)
- Day 2. Divided the waters, firmament above, water (liquid) below.
- Day 3. Divided the dry land from the seas. Created plant life.
- Day 4. Created the sun, moon, and stars. (Note that light was created beforehand.)
- Day 5. Created sea life and birds.
- Day 6. Created land animals including dinosaurs. Created man to be fruitful, fill the

---

<sup>6</sup> Ham, Ken, Snelling, Andrew, Wieland, Carl, *The Answers Book*, Green Forest, Arkansas, Master Books, 1990.



earth, and subdue it.

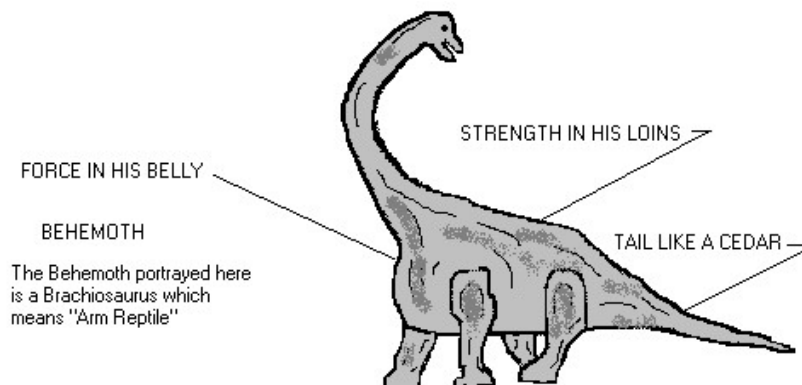
Day 7. After the sixth day, God saw that His creation was very good. He rested on the seventh day from his work and sanctified it.

- God later destroyed His creation with a worldwide flood because sin entered the world. He spared Noah's family, land creatures, and fowl by instructing Noah to build an ark. Most of the fossil record around the entire world is probably the evidence of Noah's flood.
- After the flood and tower of Babel, Noah's ancestors were scattered "abroad upon the face of the earth" (Gen 11:9). The offspring of the animals on the ark would have scattered starting upon release from the ark.
- Rapid continental separation divided the lands into the configuration we know today. Scientists refer to this as "plate tectonics" or "continental drift."

That is all there is to creation. I suppose that is not complex enough for most scientists. Can you imagine getting your Ph.D. and finding out, that is it? No big bangs, little bangs, millions of years of struggle and death. No alien visitors.

Possibly further disheartening to many who would like it to be more complicated, there were probably dinosaurs on the ark. That would be the only way to explain the existence in Job's day of two creatures that sound like dinosaurs. Remember, this subchapter is to show Jews and Christians that believe the Bible just how simple and believable creation is. Do these sound like dinosaurs to you?

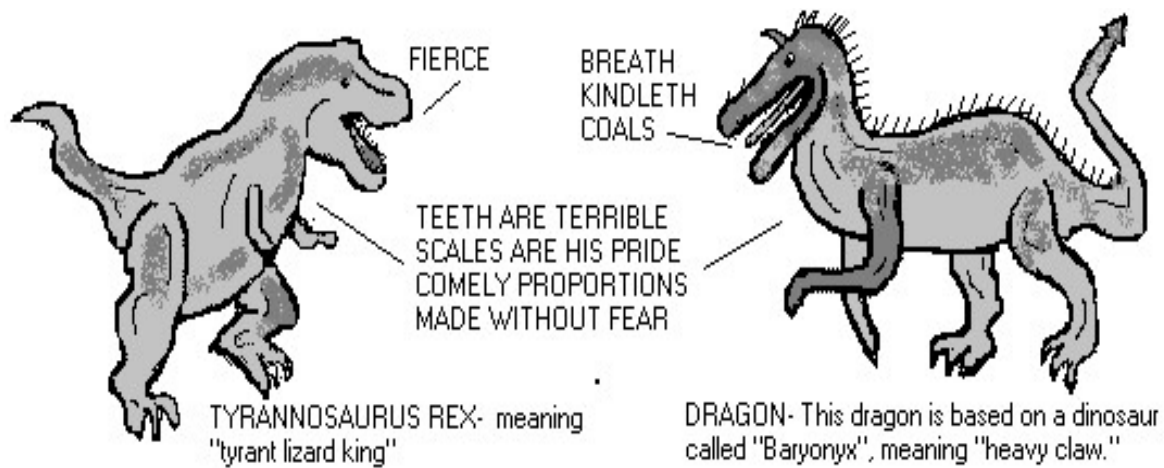
One of the sauropods? See *The Great Dinosaur Mystery* by Ken Ham.<sup>7</sup> "Lo, now, (Behemoth's) strength is in his loins, and his force is in the muscles of his belly. He moveth his tail like a cedar. His bones are like bars of iron. He is the chief of the ways of God. Behold he drinketh up a river, and hasteneth not. (Job 40:15-19, 23).



Perhaps T. Rex? "Canst thou draw out Leviathan with a hook? Canst thou fill his skin with barbed irons, or his head with fish spears? None is so fierce that dares stir him up; I will not conceal his parts, nor his power, nor his comely proportion. His teeth are terrible round about. His scales are his pride. By his sneezings a light doth shine. Out of his mouth go burning lamps, and sparks of fire leap out. Out of his nostrils goeth smoke. His breath kindleth coals, and a flame goeth out of his mouth. When he raiseth up himself, the mighty are afraid. Upon earth there is not his like, who is made without fear. (Job 41: 1, 7, 10, 12, 14-15, 18-21, 25, 33).

---

<sup>7</sup> Ham, Ken, *The Great Dinosaur Mystery*, Green Forest, Arkansas, Master Books, 1998.



Evidence for creation is included with the evidence against evolution in chapter three.

## EVOLUTION THEORY

<sup>3</sup>Knowing this first, that there shall come in the last days scoffers, walking after their own lusts, <sup>4</sup>And saying, Where is the promise of his coming? for since the fathers fell asleep, all things continue as they were from the beginning of the creation. <sup>5</sup>For this they willingly are ignorant of, that by the word of God the heavens were of old, and the earth standing out of the water and in the water: <sup>6</sup>Whereby the world that then was, being overflowed with water, perished: <sup>7</sup>But the heavens and the earth, which are now, by the same word are kept in store, reserved unto fire against the day of judgment and perdition of ungodly men. (2 Peter 3:3-7, a letter from Peter to the Jews that followed Jesus)

The religion of evolution has as its trinity Time, Chance, and Struggle & Death. As its bible, *On the Origin of Species by Means of Natural Selection*, as its televangelist, *Nova*, and its periodical, *National Geographic*. The saints of evolution include Charles Darwin, Thomas Huxley, Ernst Haeckel, and Carl Sagan. The fundamental scripture, quoted by the late Carl Sagan, is “The cosmos is all there is and ever will be.”

The premise of evolution is that “in the beginning” there was a “big bang” by which all of the galaxies, solar systems, stars, planets, moons, and comets were created. After millions or billions of years, a serendipitous arrangement of molecules gave rise to a proper environment to support life. Other molecules by chance resulted in a living cell. Then after millions or billions of additional years, through time, chance, struggle, and death, struggle and death, and more struggle and death- voila! During this period of long ages, catastrophes and climactic changes caused extinctions. Man alone arose to a supreme level, having evolved from a lower, apelike animal.

There is no room or need for a personal, creator God in the naturalistic religion of evolution. In fact, evolution is Satan’s most clever lie. Unlike Satan’s temptations such as, “Did God really say that,” in the lie of evolution we are told, “We don’t need God,” or “There is no God.” Satan must snicker whenever we say, “I believe that God created everything, and evolution is how He did it.” Sadly, I fear that a majority believes just that. The reason a Jew or Christian would believe in evolution is because that is what we are being taught by the secular world, and we are not being shown the fallacies of evolution in church or synagogue.

If there is no God, then all came into being out of chaos rather than special creation, we live, we die, the end. "The cosmos is all there is and ever will be," (Sagan). As sad as that sounds, the world loves it. If there is no God, there is no God to answer to. We can do what we want and establish our own moralities. Later chapters reflect on what the world does in good conscience without a known need to answer to God.

## TEACHING EVOLUTION

"In the future, science may perhaps be able to reconstruct a living being. But even though biology makes daily advances, nobody can make definite forecasts. If it ever happens, we shall understand better how life- this astonishing and marvelous thing that allows us to be here to wonder about the world- functions. But as to the question of 'why,' philosophy, religion, and- above all- each one of us must find the answer."<sup>8</sup>

This quotation is from a book that is a commentary on the "religion" of evolution. Unlike the Bible that states with certainty "God made" and "it was good," this book admits uncertainty. Words and phrases are used such as "possible scenarios" (plural), "mystery," "divided opinions," and "enigma." Questions are asked such as "what is life" and "does life exist elsewhere, in our galaxy and beyond." My favorite is, "the debate about the origin of life remains alive" (p. 6). And of course, contrary to a loving Creator, evolution implies struggle-and-death, struggle-and-death. Does evolution sound like "fact?"

The majority of scientists believe in "molecules-to-man" evolution. It would follow, the textbooks they write favor evolution. The gap created by the "Separation of Church and State" is getting wider and wider. And now, the National Academy of Science has published a guideline for teachers entitled "*Teaching about Evolution and the Nature of Science*."<sup>9</sup>

Since our youngsters get their foundations in the early grades, I reviewed a book from an elementary school library. This book, *The Origin of Life*, is the book referred to in the previous paragraphs. Following is a summary of what this book tells our children:

## EVOLUTION TEXT

The book opens with a legend from an African tribe that is their account of creation. It states that there are many such legends worldwide that usually associate sudden events and involve the supernatural. (It is interesting that the legends generally involve a creator and sudden events.) The points of this text follow:

Fifteen billion years ago, a "big bang" disrupts a core of matter and disperses gases throughout the universe. Ten billion years after the big bang, our solar system appeared. The formation of our system resulted from stars formed in the big bang exploding (again), yielding chemical clouds in space, which regrouped into new stars and planets. This was 5 billion years ago.

The first life forms must have appeared after the first billion years on

---

<sup>8</sup> (Hagens, Bernard and Lenay, Charles, *The Origin of Life*, p. 72, Barron's Educational Series, Inc., 1986 Hachette-Fondation Diderot/La Nouvelle Encyclopedie, Paris, France.)

<sup>9</sup> *Teaching about Evolution and the Nature of Science*, National Academy of Science.

earth. Organic molecules could have formed by lightning discharges in a primitive atmosphere of methane, hydrogen, ammonia, and water vapor. This perhaps would form organic molecules, amino acids, and cells that can reproduce and grow to produce life.

DNA formation is the next step. However, the text recognizes many divided opinions and disagreement on thoughts such as:

- “Life might be the final product of...self-organization. Many scientists disagree completely...” (p. 43.)
- “Any living form must be capable of reproducing *before* it can improve and organize itself” (p. 43, emphasis mine).
- “**Duplication:** At the time of reproduction, the blueprint of the parents (DNA), has to be transmitted to their offspring.” (p. 44-45.)
- “**Transcription:** Since the genetic code expresses the blueprint of the organism, it must be read, understood, and applied.” (p. 45.)
- “**A Beginning...and Evolution:** Let us *imagine* that the *formation of a small portion* of DNA and of some transcription proteins *can be explained*. Would we have the key to the mystery? Yes, because everything *might improve*...” (p. 48, emphasis mine.)

The next section of the text deals with topics such as the pondering of life beyond our solar system. (It is not stated if this includes angels, but I am sure it does not.) It does mention “panspermia”:

“(the famous English astrophysicist [Sir] Fred Hoyle) said: Chemical processes of living things are extremely complex...Resources from the entire galaxy were needed...in order to produce the simplest cell...All interstellar clouds...had to be involved in the beginning of life...Comets are the seeding agents of the universe...The evolution of living beings on earth is assumed to result from the addition of the genetic code of new life forms coming from outer space.”

The book continues with “The Explosion of Life.” It goes on to state that over millions of years, evolution continued. From the simplest life came more complex life, and finally man. Life supposedly started from simple animals that evolved into the first simple plant forms. Plant forms then evolved upward as did the animals.

The concluding sentiment of this book is certainly the most accurate:

“Each animal is adapted to its environment, and every part of its body is utilized in that adaptation. The immense diversity of living forms is related to the immense diversity of their ways of life. But *how are the appearances of these adaptations, new species, and new ways of life produced? This is the problem of evolution*, the subject of a completely different type of investigation- the topic of another book.” (pp. 69-70, emphasis mine)

## A FAITH THE FACTS FIT

In the next chapter, we will affirm that all mankind has ascended from the first man,



Adam, whom God made in His perfect creation. We will review commentary from the creationist view on *The Origin of Life*, and from eminent creation scientist and Jew Dr. Jonathan Sarfati on the new evolution-teaching manual. Dr. Sarfati, a scientist working for Answers in Genesis in Brisbane, Australia, has written a wonderful commentary, *Refuting Evolution*.<sup>10</sup> His book examines many inconsistencies, mistakes if you will, of “*Teaching about Evolution and the Nature of Science*.” This is an excellent work and includes commentary on fallacies of the theory of evolution. This book is one of many recommended later that show that creation is a faith the facts fit.

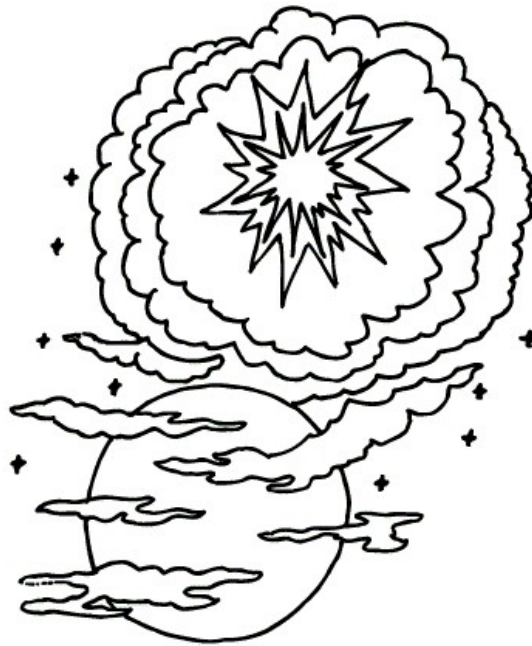
God made us and loves us. We were the grand finale of His special creation. Though we sinned and spoiled His perfect creation, He wants us to spend eternity with Him. He promised a Messiah to provide redemption for our sins. When will the Messiah come?



---

<sup>10</sup> Sarfati, Jonathan, *Refuting Evolution*, Green Forest, Arkansas, Master Books, 1999.

## Chapter 2. Out of Eve, Out of Africa



The Bible says we got here this way: God made Adam. God made Eve. They and the rest of creation were perfect (very good). They had children and grand children. Because of sin, eventually mankind turned so evil that God was sorry he made us. So he purged the earth with a great flood, except for one family. Therefore, we all should be descendents of Noah, who was a descendent of Adam.

<sup>36b</sup>(Noah), which was the son of Lamech, <sup>37</sup>W/w the son of Mathusala, w/w the son of Enoch, w/w the son of Jared, w/w the son of Maleleel, w/w the son of Cainan, <sup>38</sup>W/w the son of Enos, w/w the son of Seth, w/w the son of Adam, which was the son of God. (Luke 3:36b-38)

Hebrew Bible (Old Testament) corroboration of Noah's descent from Noah is found in Genesis 5, Genesis 10, and 1 Chronicles 1.

### OUT OF EVE

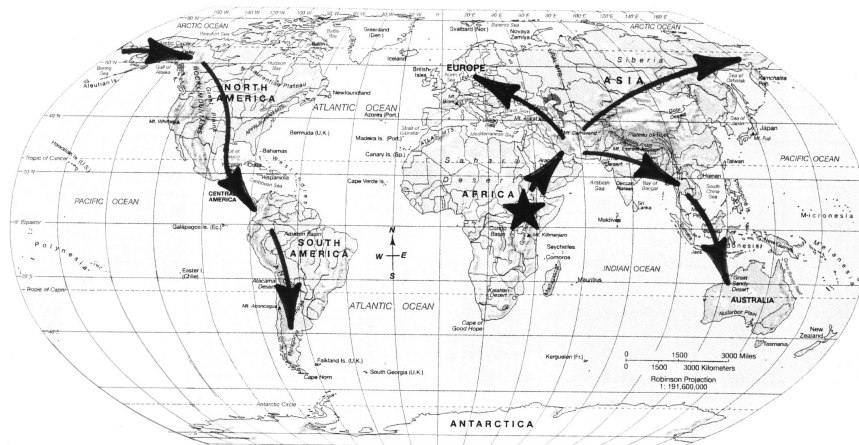
It strikes me as a humorous inevitability that as science progresses, the findings point toward the Bible (for one having an open mind about it). The latest news from the world of anthropology is the results from DNA research pointing toward a single female ancestor, "Eve." Of course science would not concede that Eve could be the Biblical Eve.

What this Eve story is all about revolves around mitochondrial DNA. Mitochondria are organelles found in nearly every cell. They are passed from mother to child and are *only* inherited from the mother. By sampling mitochondria from people groups around the world, scientists are able to trace lineages toward a common ancestor or ancestors.

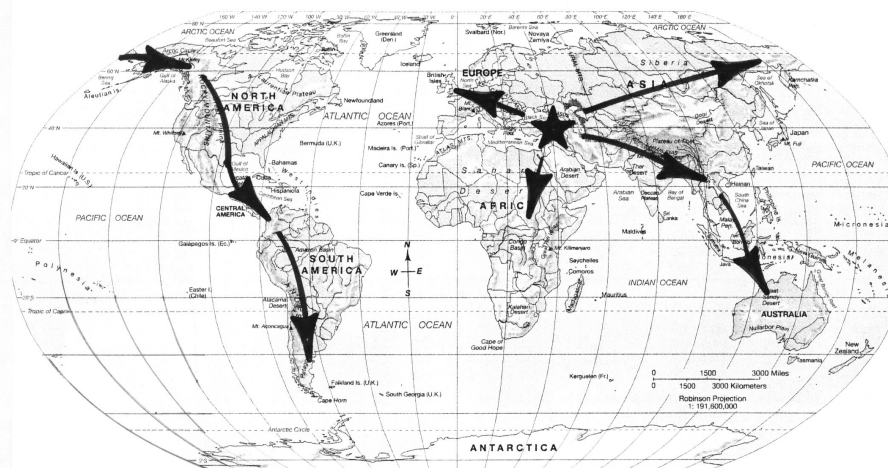
The Discovery Channel aired a special in 2002 called Real Eve. The program opens by showing portraits of African mothers and infants. The narrator announces, “This woman is the mother of mankind, the genetic Eve from whom we all descend. She lived 150,000 years ago in East Africa and every one on earth is related to her.”

The program continues for two interesting hours explaining how the descendents of this Eve traveled to the rest of the world. First into what is now Yemen and the Middle East, then to Asia, Malaysia, and Australia. Also, some to China and eventually the Americas. Later, descendents living in the Middle East migrated North and West to the Balkans and Europe.

As the migration routes were mapped, I noticed a similarity to how a creationist could map the spreading of civilization from Ararat, the “dock” of Noah’s ark. The only difference would be the direction of one arrow from Africa to the Middle East. (See map.) This might not be hard to fathom because all of the people groups around the world each come from a single “granddaughter” of Eve. However, in Africa they seem to come from several granddaughters. In fact, this is the reason that the writers of Real Eve considered the Africans older, because of more variations.



“Eve” or “Out-of-Africa” migration route. From Africa to present day Yemen, then to all points from there.



Possible Biblical migration route from Mount Ararat into all the world.

Previously, evolution and racism have at times gone hand-in-hand. An interesting point made on this show was, “Under the skin we are all very much the same,” and “If we look at the DNA of all of us... we show less variation than we would find in a small group of (apes).” The view that the first humans were dark skinned was refreshing also rather than the dark skin thought to be a “curse.”

The Bible certainly agrees that we all came from the real, Real Eve.

## OUT OF ARARAT

We have a strong scriptural basis to believe that we all do go back to Noah and Adam. We know that our lineage cannot circumvent Noah, because God’s Word tells us that the entire world was judged by water. Only life aboard the ark and that of fishes and sea creatures were spared.

This world judgment was brought on by sin (Genesis 6:6-7) “And it repented the Lord that he had made man on the earth, and it grieved him at his heart. And the Lord said, I will destroy man whom I have created from the face of the earth; both man, and beast, and the creeping thing, and the fowls of the air; for it repenteth me that I have made them.” But Noah found grace in the eyes of the Lord (verse 8).

It is extremely important to understand what the scriptures tell us in Genesis 6. Because of sin there is death (compare Genesis 3:19). All flesh was destroyed by the flood “wherein is the breath of life” (Genesis 6:17). The importance is beyond lineage to Noah and Adam, the importance is to help us understand the spreading of mankind and animals to all continents, the differences of languages, the fossil record, the ice age, the age of the earth, faith, ministering to others, and our life choices. These points will be addressed in the following chapters. Note the reference to “the breath of life” again in verse 17.

Christians have the view that New Testament scripture takes Jesus’ ancestry back to Noah, back to the Mountains of Ararat where Noah’s family departed from a safely shored ark. Through the books of Genesis, 1 Chronicles, the prophets, and the New Testament, we can follow the lineage of our generations back to the days of historical Christ, back to Noah, and ultimately to Adam. Hence, *Out of Ararat*, to the survivors of the flood, to whom all of us would trace our lineage if we could, and further, to the first Adam.

## OUT-OF-AFRICA

The title of this chapter comes from an oft-repeated phrase, most recently appearing as a newspaper headline, *Study reinforces ‘Out-of-Africa’ theory of human evolution*<sup>11</sup>. In the science world’s search for answers outside of God, they sometimes stumble upon the right answer; they just think it means something else. As a means of comparison, I might look in the refrigerator and see a wonderful dessert. My conclusion is that I am going to eat some of it. Imagine my surprise and dismay when Jeanne tells me it is for a student’s birthday party, and I cannot have any. The only difference with scientists is, they can make up another theory, but I cannot seem to get another chocolate cake with that white, real-fluffy icing that tastes best served in a large bowl with vanilla ice cream.

---

<sup>11</sup> Donn, Jeff, “Study reinforces ‘out-of-Africa’ theory of human evolution,” Associated Press, The [Sunbury, Pa.] Daily Item, 12/7/00, pA8.

The “Out-of-Africa” article states the following: A world-wide DNA study has yielded “the best evidence yet that modern man first evolved in Africa” and scattered to populate the world; Perhaps the first Homo sapiens “replaced other early humans with virtually no interbreeding,” and; “There was probably a fairly small group that migrated out of Africa and that population probably spread in several directions and grew pretty quickly.”

The article declares that the researchers favor the “Out-of-Africa” theory over a “rival” theory involving “early humans including Neanderthals and Homo erectus,” while others say “the latest findings could allow for a theory that merges both models: humans from Africa later mating with other early humans in distant places.”

For a male-female pair to mate and create a fertilized egg, the number of gene pairs from each parent must match and line up in the same position in the DNA chain. That is why, to take an outrageous example, a human and a horse cannot mate. For a Neanderthal and any “other” Homo erectus, Cro Magnon, or whatever to interbreed, they would require the same amount of gene pairs. The odds of evolution are ridiculous enough without imagining that two lineages of “early man” evolved and had the good fortune of the same number of gene pairs with matching configuration. Actually, those odds are preposterous.

## SCIENTIFIC ALTERNATIVES TO OUT-OF-AFRICA

From Compton’s Interactive Encyclopedia on *Panspermia*:<sup>12</sup> “Many theories have been developed to explain how life first originated on Earth. Some people theorize that microorganisms reached Earth from another planet. Most scientists discount this idea, called panspermia, because the radiation in space would kill cells or spores before they reached Earth. Instead, they believe that terrestrial life evolved from nonliving matter on the primitive Earth.

Then there is the theory that extraterrestrials planted us here as an experiment. This is an excellent way to get around the evidence supporting creation, not evolution, yet does not require a creator-God. I have not heard where the extraterrestrials come from, but the assumption is that these ET’s could sow the seeds of panspermia or brew primordial soup. In theory, these ET’s could have appeared as the result of more superior ET’s from somewhere else sowing and brewing, which previously evolved somewhere else.

The odds for finding extraterrestrial life might be slimmer than the impossible odds of molecules-to-man evolution occurring. From Compton’s, on Extraterrestrial Life:<sup>13</sup> “The search for life away from planet Earth has been called a science without a subject matter. Despite the countless hours that dedicated scientists and amateurs alike have spent searching the skies, there is no evidence that life exists anywhere in the universe except on Earth.” Fortunately for science, odds can be “overcome” in their minds.

Also found in Compton’s:<sup>14</sup> “The Green Bank equation, devised by astrophysicist F.D. Drake, represents an *attempt to estimate* the number of technically advanced civilizations in the Milky Way galaxy. It expresses mathematically the relationship of the number of stars, the number of stars with planetary systems, the number of planets in each system having conditions suitable for the origin of life, the number of planets on which life could actually develop, the

---

<sup>12</sup> Excerpted from *Compton's Interactive Encyclopedia*. Copyright © 1994, 1995, 1996, 1997 The Learning Company, Inc. All Rights Reserved.

<sup>13</sup> Excerpted from *Compton's Interactive Encyclopedia*. Copyright © 1994, 1995, 1996, 1997 The Learning Company, Inc. All Rights Reserved.

<sup>14</sup> Excerpted from *Compton's Interactive Encyclopedia*. Copyright © 1994, 1995, 1996, 1997 The Learning Company, Inc. All Rights Reserved.



number of those planets on which intelligent life could evolve, the number of intelligent populations that could develop civilizations capable of interstellar communications, and, finally, the average lifespan of technical civilizations. *Depending on how estimates for various terms in the equation are made, the number of advanced civilizations in the Milky Way is estimated at from 1 to 1,000,000.*" (Emphasis mine. I could estimate in that range, and I know that "1" is a good number because it already happened.)

## MISSING LINKS

The archaeologists (diggers) and paleontologists (fossil experts) have looked long and hard for the missing links that connect "early" species with "modern" species. They have not found any skeletal remains that connect humans to an early ape-man predecessor, hard as they try. Many times bones have been found and assembled, histories conjured, only later to be debunked. Skeletons are assembled in hunched-over positions because it is assumed that in a transition from ape-to-man, that is how the "animal" would have walked. Stories appear from minor skeletal assemblies, make the headlines, later are disproved, and quietly fade away. My favorite story is of a would-be human ancestor called "Nebraska Man."

## NEBRASKA MAN

Nebraska Man was "found" by archaeologists who went on to reconstruct the lifestyle of these people, what they ate, their social structure, and so on based on the evidence found at this site. The discovery was considered by scientists at that time to be very important. Nebraska Man was used at the infamous Scopes trial on the side of the evolutionists. Years later, further digging proved Nebraska Man to be a *pig*, not a human. Unfortunately, this discovery was after the Scopes trial decision was made and the damage was done. As usual, there was no big announcement about the mistake, no big retraction, no re-opening of the Scopes trial. The mistakes of scientists are often refuted by their colleagues, but this tends to be away from the public eye and ear.

## CREATION SCIENCE AND OUT-OF-AFRICA

It is so simple when one turns to the book of Genesis and accepts it as God's Word, all of it. I know no better way to answer science with Out-of-Africa, or one small population in one place, than in reading the Creation account in Genesis. From Ken Ham's question and answer book, "In analyzing (mitochondrial) DNA in humans all over the globe, scientists showed that all humans on earth (descended) this from one woman. Later research on the mutation rate also resulted in another startling conclusion- this woman had to live about 6,000 years ago. This fits beautifully with the time line of history as recorded in God's Word."<sup>15</sup>

If you want to get serious in learning about DNA, I suggest you read *In the Beginning Was Information*, by Dr. Werner Gitt. Please see Recommended Reading.

---

<sup>15</sup> Ham, Ken, *Did Adam Have a Belly Button?* Green Forest, Arkansas, Master Books, 1999, p. 175

## FURTHER OUT-OF-ARARAT

<sup>1</sup>**Now these are the generations of the sons of Noah, Shem, Ham, and Japheth:** and unto them were sons born after the flood.

<sup>2</sup>**The sons of Japheth;** Gomer, and Magog, and Madai, and Javan, and Tubal, and Meshech, and Tiras. <sup>3</sup>And the sons of Gomer; Ashkenaz, and Riphath, and Togarmah. <sup>4</sup>And the sons of Javan; Elishah, and Tarshish, Kittim, and Dodanim. <sup>5</sup>By these were the isles of the Gentiles divided in their lands; every one after his tongue, after their families, in their nations.

<sup>6</sup>**And the sons of Ham;** Cush, and Mizraim, and Phut, and Canaan. <sup>7</sup>And the sons of Cush; Seba, and Havilah, and Sabtah, and Raamah, and Sabtecha: and the sons of Raamah, Sheba, and Dedan. <sup>8</sup>And Cush begat Nimrod: he began to be a mighty one in the earth. <sup>9</sup>He was a mighty hunter before the Lord: wherefore it is said, Even as Nimrod the mighty hunter before the Lord. <sup>10</sup>And the beginning of his kingdom was Babel, and Erech, and Accad, and Calneh, in the land of Shinar. <sup>11</sup>Out of that land went forth Asshur, and builded Nineveh, and the city Rehoboth, and Calah, <sup>12</sup>And Resen between Nineveh and Calah: the same is a great city. <sup>13</sup>And Mizraim begat Ludim, and Anamim, and Lehabim, and Naphtuhim, <sup>14</sup>And Pathrusim, and Casluhim, (out of whom came Philistim,) and Caphtorim. <sup>15</sup>And Canaan begat Sidon his firstborn, and Heth, <sup>16</sup>And the Jebusite, and the Amorite, and the Girgasite, <sup>17</sup>And the Hivite, and the Arkite, and the Sinite, <sup>18</sup>And the Arvadite, and the Zemarite, and the Hamathite: and afterward were the families of the Canaanites spread abroad. <sup>19</sup>And the border of the Canaanites was from Sidon, as thou comest to Gerar, unto Gaza; as thou goest, unto Sodom, and Gomorrah, and Admah, and Zeboim, even unto Lasha. <sup>20</sup>These are the sons of Ham, after their families, after their tongues, in their countries, and in their nations.

<sup>21</sup>**Unto Shem** also, the father of all the children of Eber, the brother of Japheth the elder, even to him were children born. <sup>22</sup>The children of Shem; Elam, and Asshur, and Arphaxad, and Lud, and Aram. <sup>23</sup>And the children of Aram; Uz, and Hul, and Gether, and Mash. <sup>24</sup>And Arphaxad begat Salah; and Salah begat Eber. <sup>25</sup>And unto Eber were born two sons: the name of one was Peleg; for in his days was the earth divided; and his brother's name was Joktan. <sup>26</sup>And Joktan begat Almodad, and Sheleph, and Hazarmaveth, and Jerah, <sup>27</sup>And Hadoram, and Uzal, and Diklah, <sup>28</sup>And Obal, and Abimael, and Sheba, <sup>29</sup>And Ophir, and Havilah, and Jobab: all these were the sons of Joktan. <sup>30</sup>And their dwelling was from Mesha, as thou goest unto Sephar a mount of the east. <sup>31</sup>These are the sons of Shem, after their families, after their tongues, in their lands, after their nations.

<sup>32</sup>These are the families of the sons of Noah, after their generations, in their nations: and by these were the nations divided in the earth after the flood. (Genesis 10)

The preceding scripture tells us where Noah's descendents traveled in the generations following the flood. Just as *Out-of-Africa* and Real Eve suppose, a small initial population base

booms into many, which spreads and spreads. There is no interspecies breeding, as there are no other groups with which to mate. The gene pool reduces, and family groups take on certain characteristics (a bias toward dark or light skin, hair, or eyes for example). Later, because of the tower of Babel, there is a further spread resulting from the confusion of language. Later yet there is further segregation as the continents drift apart. Please see chapter 10 for deeper discussion on the topic of “races.”

## CAIN’S WIFE

Now might be the perfect time to address one of the most frequently asked questions encountered when discussing the Biblical view of origins. The Bible tells us that Adam was the first man. It also tells us where Adam’s wife came from; God took one of Adam’s ribs and created a woman. We know where Cain came from; he was the son of Adam and Eve; but what about Cain’s wife?

Do we lose our attention spans after we read Genesis chapters 1 and 2? The Biblical account of our origins seems to slow down after chapter 2 for many readers. If we continue to read, we are told that Adam lived for 930 years. That is a long time. He could have fathered many children. In fact, according to Genesis 5:4, Adam and Eve had many children: *And the days of Adam after he had begotten Seth were eight hundred years: and he begat sons and daughters.* Cain’s wife was most likely his sister. The gene pool was nearly pure at that time, so the dangers affecting children from marrying close relatives did not exist. The laws against incest did not come until well after Noah’s Flood, and were recorded by Moses: *None of you shall approach to any that is near of kin to him, to uncover their nakedness: I am the Lord. Lev. 18:6.* In fact, Noah’s offspring would have faced the same situation, except that it really was not a “situation” at that time in our history.

Many people use the “Cain’s wife” question as an anti-creation-pro-evolution point. Do those stuck on this question believe that hundreds of the same people-kind spontaneously generated to form a pool of unrelated breeders to kick off the evolutionary chain of our first ancestors? No. Evolution, which is a hard pill to swallow anyway the more you think about it, logically would have had the same “problem.” With God it was a plan, not a problem.

## LOGISTICS OF NOAH’S FLOOD

The possibility of Noah’s flood raises many perplexing questions for many people: where did all the water come from; was the ark big enough for all the animals to fit, and; how could there be enough food on the ark? After answering these questions, let us discuss the possibility of all of the dinosaur kinds being on the ark.

Where did all the water come from? *And God said, Let there be a firmament in the midst of the waters, and let it divide the waters from the waters. And God made the firmament, and divided the waters which were under the firmament from the waters which were above the firmament: and it was so. Gen. 1:6-7.* In addition to the waters on the earth, there were waters above the earth at that time<sup>16</sup>. The earth was very different while still a perfect creation. These waters above created a stabilizing effect on the climate of the earth, making it uniform, an “Eden” all over earth. There were also “fountains of the deep.” *In the six hundredth year of*

---

<sup>16</sup> Snider, Harold, *That Amazing Book- Genesis!*, Hicksville, NY, Exposition Press, 1977, p.58.

*Noah's life, in the second month, the seventeenth day of the month, the same day were all the fountains of the great deep broken up, and the windows of heaven were opened. Gen. 7:11. We cannot know how much water there was on the surface, above, and beneath the earth before the flood. We also do not know how high the mountains were before the flood. Since the present surface of the earth is mostly water, covered by deep oceans, it is not too hard to believe that things could be rearranged and the earth totally immersed.*

Where did the water go? How could it cover the highest mountain? Again, who knows how high the tallest mountains were before the flood. God inspired David to write these verses: *You clothed the earth with floods of waters covering up the mountains. You spoke, and at the sound of your shout the water collected into its vast ocean beds, and mountains rose and valleys sank to the levels you decreed. And then you set a boundary for the seas, so that they would never again cover the earth. Psalms 104:6-9 LVB.*

Was the ark big enough for all the animals to fit? I would say! God commanded Noah: *Make thee an ark of gopher wood; rooms shalt thou make in the ark, and shalt pitch it within and without with pitch. And this is the fashion which thou shalt make it of: The length of the ark shall be three hundred cubits (450 feet), the breadth of it fifty cubits (75 feet), and the height of it thirty cubits (45 feet). A window shalt thou make to the ark, and in a cubit shalt thou finish it above; and the door of the ark shalt thou set in the side thereof; with lower, second, and third stories (3 stories high) shalt thou make it. Gen:6:14-16.* The three stories totaled over 100,000 square feet! More than two football fields. (Creation scientists have estimated that there were probably less than 30,000 animals on board, and the massive ark could easily accommodate that many.)

How could there be enough food on the ark? We do not know exactly how many animals there were. God would only need to send pairs from each *kind* of animal. For example, there are many breeds of dogs that most likely originally came from one dog kind, perhaps the wolf. Only a pair of the original kind would have been needed on the ark. The same could apply to horses, cats, cattle, deer, bird kinds, and so on. God could have caused the animals metabolisms to slow down, which would greatly reduce the amount of food required, and the “barn work.” Perhaps some hibernated. God would have a logical way, right?

Dinosaurs? How could they fit? Were they extinct by then? There is nothing in the Bible to cause us to believe in any extinctions before the flood. In fact, with the favorable climate around the world prior to the flood, extinctions are rather doubtful. It is fair to believe that there were dinosaurs on the ark. Job chapters 40 and 41 (written after the flood) describe what are probably large dinosaurs, “behemoth,” and “leviathan.” Would all these big dinosaurs fit on the ark? Most dinosaurs are not 100-ton beasts, but are more the size of a sheep, on average. Even the largest dinosaurs are small when born. Could Noah have taken young dinosaurs? That is what I would have done. You could get a lot of teenage (or baby) dinosaurs and young elephants on an ark the size of Noah’s!

## SUNKEN CITIES

I recently watched a television special about cities sunken beneath the seas. These cities presented the investigators with an enigma. Who built them? When? How? What happened to the people? We know little about the earth and geography before the flood. Could these cities be antediluvian (i.e. pre-flood), buried in water by Noah’s flood? I think that is a distinct possibility. I also believe that mankind was much further advanced at that time than most archaeologists would have us believe. Remember, Adam was made in a perfect creation. Our

minds (gray matter) and bodies have been affected by thousands of years of degradation. See recommended Reading, *The Puzzle of Ancient Man*, Donald E. Chittick, Ph.D.

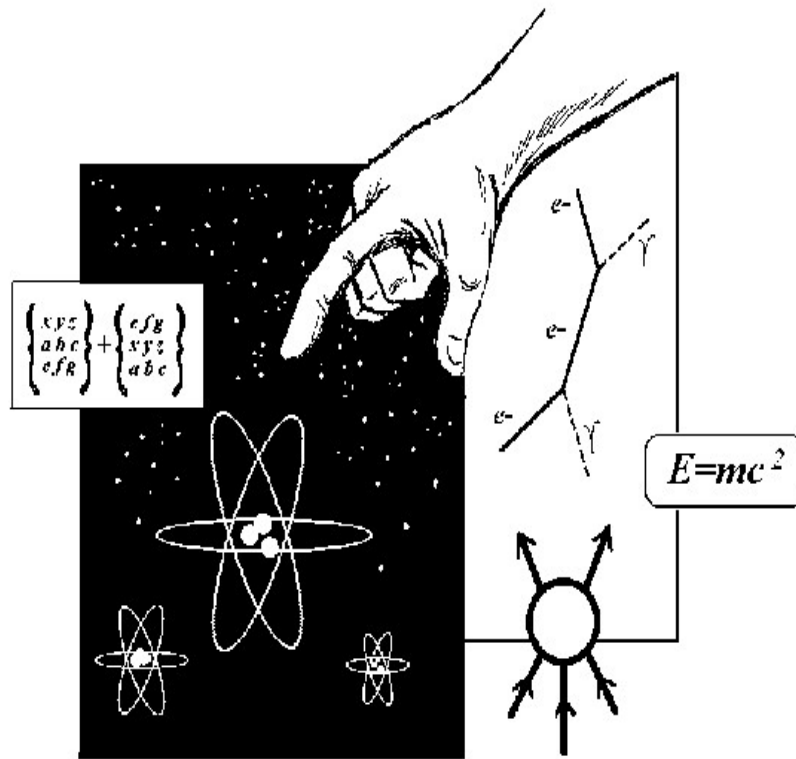
We do know there were cities and fine crafts before the flood: *And Cain knew his wife; and she conceived, and bare Enoch: and he builded a city, and called the name of the city, after the name of his son, Enoch...And Adah bare Jabal: he was the father of such as dwell in tents, and of such as have cattle. And his brother's name was Jubal: he was the father of all such as handle the harp and organ. And Zillah, she also bare Tubalcain, an instructor of every artificer in brass and iron: and the sister of Tubalcain was Naamah. Gen. 4:17, 20-22.*

It is very possible that we are finding pre-flood cities and civilizations, beneath the sea and on land as well. Further examination may one day prove this.

As if sin and death were not enough for us to bring on the earth, we made things so bad that God had to destroy it all. But, Noah found grace in the eyes of the Lord, and so can we. The Bible promises a Redeemer. When will He come, or has He come already?



## Chapter 3. Can the Bible and Science Compromise?



### PROPHECY OF ENOCH, RETOLD BY JUDE:

<sup>14</sup>And Enoch also, the seventh from Adam, prophesied of these, saying, Behold, the Lord cometh with ten thousands of his saints, <sup>15</sup>To execute judgment upon all, and to convince all that are ungodly among them of all their ungodly deeds which they have ungodly committed, and of all their hard speeches which ungodly sinners have spoken against him. <sup>16</sup>These are murmurers, complainers, walking after their own lusts; and their mouth speaketh great swelling words, having men's persons in admiration because of advantage.

<sup>17</sup>But, beloved, remember ye the words which were spoken before of the apostles of our Lord Jesus Christ; <sup>18</sup>How that they told you there should be mockers in the last time, who should walk after their own ungodly lusts. <sup>19</sup>These be they who separate themselves, sensual, having not the spirit. (Jude 1:14-20)

### COMPROMISE

Can the Bible and science compromise? Only if the following makes sense: “Well, maybe a little conciliation is possible. God, being the loving God He is, would not mind compromising with some of our top scientists, the most brilliant minds that the 21<sup>st</sup> century can offer. We *are* pretty smart. We have come a long way. God would surely compromise with twentieth century Einsteins and Sagans.” Can God’s People compromise with scientists, even though scientists cannot produce life like God? Even though they do not know how the universe



was formed, like God? Or when? Even though scientists (and doctors) cannot heal miraculously, supernaturally, like God? Even though many do not believe in God? Even though many are among the scoffers and the murmurers of which the New Testament warns?”

All scientists do not believe in evolution as the populace assumes. The renowned zoologist Jack Hanna, during a 1997 appearance on Larry King Live, was showing live animals. Mr. King commented that the animals “evolved,” and Mr. Hanna interjected, “God made them for our enjoyment.” My father was very pleased with Mr. Hanna’s remark, and exchanged letters with Mr. Hanna to express his delight. Dad was very proud of the autographed photo that Mr. Hanna sent to him.

## OPPOSITES THAT OPPOSE

Hardcore evolutionist thinkers, those who desire to replace the supernatural with naturalistic science, soft-sell with lines like, “We are not trying to take your religion away, just open our children to learning the scientific...,” etc. First of all, we should not compromise with doctrine that comes from outside of the Bible. If it is outside the Bible, it is not really doctrine then, is it? The proof of scripture comes from within. The Bible does not contradict itself, and the meaning never changes. It is the intent of this book to be true; but this is not the infallible Word of God.

A scientist who believes in evolution because he does not want to believe in God is certainly not going to compromise his beliefs with the most obvious of proof. The other side of this, however, is currently a clever ruse used to get us to compromise our faith. For example, the following quote: “President of the National Academy of Sciences Bruce Alberts said: ‘There are very many outstanding members of this academy who are very religious people, people who believe in evolution, many of them biologists’<sup>17</sup>.” This statement is not true. There are not “many members of (NAS) who are very religious people.” That statement is a deceptive smokescreen.

Further, how can the divine scriptures compromise with science when the science books are full of mistakes?

By the word of the Lord were the heavens made; and all the host of them by the breath of his mouth. He gathereth the waters of the sea together as an heap: he layeth up the depth in storehouses. Let all the earth fear the Lord: let all the inhabitants of the world stand in awe of him. For he spake, and it was done; he commanded, and it stood fast. Psalms 33:6-9).

The following sections of this chapter outline weaknesses of evolutionary resources taken from popular text and video sources.

## THE ORIGIN OF LIFE (TEXTBOOK)

In the last chapter we skimmed through an evolution textbook, *The Origin of Life*<sup>18</sup>. As we address the question, “Can the Bible and Science Compromise,” let us contemplate evolution

---

<sup>17</sup> Sarfati, Jonathan, *Refuting Evolution*, Green Forest, Arkansas, Master Books, 1999.

<sup>18</sup> Bernard Hagene and Charles Lenay, *The Origin of Life*, Fondation Diderot/La Nouvelle Encyclopedie, Paris, France, 1986.

from a common sense viewpoint, and the same consideration of the text. Evolution means onward and upward by time and chance, in effect.

An evolutionist would presume that the first living organisms did not have ears. Over long ages, early in the evolutionary chain, some animal would have developed hearing. This function would be passed along to future reptiles, amphibians, birds, and mammals. The assumption would have to be that suddenly, some primitive animal developed something to receive sound waves, something to convert them for transmission through the nervous system, a system of nerves devoted to hearing, and a method for interpreting the signals. All at once. That defies logic, but suggests design. One for God.

Look at any organ of the most simple of animals. There are generally a lot of parts that all had to occur at once for the whole to work. How could that happen? What does the evolution textbook have to say that does not agree with common sense? Does evolution conflict with itself?

The Bible asserts that God created living beings to reproduce (replenish) after their kind. Evolution alleges one species reproduces to a more favorable species. On page 6 the text asks, "What is life?" On pages 9-10, it is explained that one of the important characteristics of life is self-reproduction. The authors state that the offspring of pigeons are pigeons, whales are whales, etc. Yep, that is what God says, too. Strike one up for science compromising with the Bible, and give God another check mark.

From where did matter come? "Our universe began 15 billion years ago in...the Big Bang, which liberated an incredible amount of energy" p16. Where did the matter come from that preceded the Big Bang? What created the laws of order (atomic structure)? They believe that matter always was, but God could not always have been. Science has no explanation for where matter came from and what originated the laws of physics. The Bible says that God created the heavens and the earth. This claim then is that God made matter. How could God make matter? The law that makes an atomic bomb so powerful is  $E=mc^2$ , energy equals the speed of light squared times mass. Rearranged, mass (matter) equals energy divided by the speed of light squared. That means, lots of energy can make matter from nothing, "*ex nihilo*" in Latin. God is omnipotent, all-powerful. He has unlimited energy, therefore no limit of matter he can create.

The text continues by stating that living beings make the molecules themselves of which they are composed, p22. How were molecules formed before the living beings were formed? The text cites experiments where energy from lightning created molecules, which themselves became more complex molecules, DNA. This apparently happened for no reason. "These life components in the primitive soup were still in total disorder: there was only soup," p30. Supposedly, such molecules became more complex, and self-organized. The reproductive system would develop gradually during evolution. Many scientists think that reproduction is not as trivial as just stated. "They think that self-reproduction is the most important characteristic and that it should exist before any definite organization, p43. How do you do that? Strike up another one for God. Replenishing after one's kind is a major part of God's creation account.

Do you remember the old commercial with the line, "Parts is parts?" When I was a young boy, as a future engineer, I was always scheming up some little invention and drawing "instruckshins." One time I made a 2-way radio. I stuck a nail in one end of a small box for an antenna, taped metallic bottle caps to the box for a microphone and a receiver, installed a battery, and ran wire from component to component. I showed it to my uncle. He said it would not work. He was right. I did not understand why not; I *installed* all the necessary *parts*.

DNA is the molecular set of instructions for our bodies, the "instruckshins" for our necessary parts. I think the origin of DNA is evolution's biggest problem to explain. It is, for

them, a design for life that preceded life without a designer. “The problem of life is solved, therefore, if one has a beginning of duplication and a beginning of transcription,” p49. “If” is a big word in this sentence. Transcription is DNA making a change in its order so that offspring change.

DNA pair numbers have to match for fertilization to occur. If one animal becomes another, a new animal, it needs another changed one to mate with or there can be no reproduction. That is why people cannot mate with monkeys; the gene pairs do not match. With evolution, you have kinds that became other kinds with different numbers of gene pairs. Somehow mommy and daddy new kinds would have to occur together so they could mate and make more of the new kinds. How incredulous is that?

The conclusion of this textbook, p72, is entitled “The Question Remains Alive.” That is because evolution provides but a hollow answer, if an answer at all. From p72, “But why did life appear? Does life have a goal? These questions science cannot answer.” Only God has the answers to these questions, and they are revealed to us in His Holy Word.

## TEACHING ABOUT EVOLUTION (INSTRUCTIONAL TEXT)

Dr. Jonathan Sarfati’s book, *Refuting Evolution*,<sup>19</sup> investigates the claims for evolution made by the National Academy of Sciences (USA). The NAS has compiled a book containing information for the purpose of helping teachers further indoctrinate students into the beliefs of evolution. This book is entitled *Teaching About Evolution and the Nature of Science*<sup>20</sup>.

Since we are questioning, “Can the Bible and Science Compromise,” let’s look at some quotes by prominent evolutionists taken from Dr. Sarfati’s book that counter-indicate compromise:

“Evolution (is) a theory universally accepted not because it can be proven by logically coherent evidence to be true, but because the only alternative, special creation, is clearly incredible,” p16, Professor D.M.S. Watson.

“We take the side of science in spite of the patent absurdity of some of its constructs, in spite of its failure to fulfill many of its extravagant promises...for we cannot allow a Divine Foot in the door,” pp17-18, Richard Lewontin.

Sadly, “As were many persons from Alabama, I was a born-again Christian. When I was fifteen, I entered the Southern Baptist Church with great fervor and interest in the fundamentalist religion; I left at seventeen when I got to the University of Alabama and heard about evolutionary theory,” pp19-20, E.O. Wilson. Another example of why I believe evolution is Satan’s greatest lie.

These few quotations were taken from chapter one of *Refuting Evolution*. I highly recommend this up-to-date critique of evolution to parents and students. It is important to know the facts ahead of time, in preparation for the day that a teacher or professor looks you in the eye and says, “There is no God.” What will you say?

---

<sup>19</sup> Sarfati, Jonathan, *Refuting Evolution*, Green Forest, Arkansas, Master Books, 1999.

<sup>20</sup> *Teaching about Evolution and the Nature of Science*, National Academy of Science.

## PENNSYLVANIA DEPARTMENT OF EDUCATION

There have been several recent newspaper articles on teaching evolution versus creation. One article was “Evolution vs. Creation: Some tackle it, some don’t”<sup>21</sup> by a staff reporter from our local central Pennsylvania newspaper. The reporter interviewed local teachers. Many Pennsylvania teachers are concerned that wording of the proposed new science standards for public schools would allow religion in the class. The standard (i.e. guideline for teachers to follow) says teachers should “explain the mechanism of the theory of evolution” by analyzing “evidence of fossil records...that support *or do not support* the theory of evolution” (emphasis mine.) Some worry that the last part of this quote would allow scientific creationism in the class. God would never create a problem like this for Himself. The teachers interviewed in the article had differing viewpoints of how the issue should be handled, but the reporter’s conclusion was “the public school teachers said their decisions regarding crafting the science curriculum is largely based on state standards.”

It seemed for a while that creationists, Biblical or other, had a foot inside the door, through the tiniest crack. From the same newspaper came a promising article.<sup>22</sup> The true *religious zealots*, that is *the evolutionists*, were squawking. New Pennsylvania standards would allow for students to analyze “evidence...that support(s) or do(es) not support the theory of evolution.” Some quotes from the article:

- It is very much a backdoor effort to let creationism be taught in the schools, and it is a pretty clever one. Rob Boston, Americans United for Separation of Church and State.
- Education officials play down the criticism...(and) contend that teaching only evolution is an orthodoxy unto itself. (Reporter.)
- Is evolution so delicate a flower that it must be protected? If it is, then there must be something wrong with it. Andrew Wert, Creation Science Fellowship.
- We are very troubled by the language (of the standards), which seems to permit creationism. Larry Frankel, ACLU.
- It is clear that the standards mandate the teaching of evolution. They also encourage schools to use the scientific method to explore other theories as well. Dan Langan, the (Pennsylvania) Department of Education.
- You cannot fully or completely present that aspect of science to a child without discussing creationism as an approach to answering questions of ‘Where did we come from?’ and ‘How did we get here?’ When state government wades into that particular issue and weighs in on the side of evolution to the neglect of creation, it is exhibiting an extreme bias. Rep. Samuel E. Rohrer, (PA) House Education Committee.

I was proud of my home state for handling the controversy this way; but this all changed a few months later. Roger D.K. Thomas, a professor at Franklin & Marshall College, said of the latter change, “We don’t want Pennsylvania to look as if we’re living in the Dark Ages.”<sup>23</sup>

---

<sup>21</sup> Finnerty, John, “Evolution vs. Creation: Some tackle it, some don’t,” The Daily Item, Sunbury, Pa. USA 12/30/00, p. B3.

<sup>22</sup> Raffaele, Martha, “New state science standards provoke evolution theorists,” The Associated Press, The Daily Item, Sunbury, Pa., USA 2/18/01, p. A1.

<sup>23</sup> Jackson, Peter, “Board revises science standards, strikes creationism language,” The Associated Press, The Daily Item, Sunbury, Pa., USA 7/13/01, p. A3.

## KANSAS BOARD OF EDUCATION

Recent years found the Kansas educational system in a controversy over the teaching of evolution and creation. For a year, the teaching standards in Kansas limited what of evolution could be taught; however, a new Kansas Board of Education indicated it would give approval to taking faith out of the classroom. This is a sad conclusion if it is indeed the conclusion.

At issue is the religion of evolution versus the religion of God and the Bible, pure and simple. Following is a coward's way out: "But Jack Krebs of Kansas Citizens for Science said the revisions would help *improve the state's tarnished image with scientists* by restoring mainstream standards on the history of the universe."<sup>24</sup> (Emphasis added.)

Mr. Krebs, I want as many people as possible to find the truth. Can you guarantee that you know the truth? Are you doing the right thing by withholding *all* good science and logic from your students? What are you afraid of, Mr. Krebs?

I sincerely believe that many who follow the religion of evolution will spend their eternity with countless scientists, who had theories, to whom the Lord will say, "I do not know you." I do not know what Judgment Day will be like. Will God ask the lost if scientists can save them from the second death? Pride is the downfall of the soul.

## HAWAII STATE BOARD OF EDUCATION

It appears trendy in the new millennium to want to look good to the scientists. Wow, we used to act like they were nerds; now I do not feel so bad being an engineer. The state Board of Education in Hawaii has "unanimously rejected a proposal to require Hawaii public schools to teach biblical creationism in science classes."<sup>25</sup> (The author forgot to capitalize "Biblical.") Gareth Wynn-Williams of the University of Hawaii stated, "I hope and trust that the majority of the board has the wisdom to ensure that the state of Hawaii does not become the laughing stock of the scientific world."

## A "DELICATE FLOWER"

Evolutionists-- some knowingly-- have been teaching little white lies as evidence of evolution. One example is embryonic development. In 1874, Ernst Haeckel, a supporter of Charles Darwin, prepared diagrams showing embryos of several different species. All looked very similar. The claim was that they looked similar because the embryonic development of the different animals reflects their evolutionary history. The embryo drawings represented a fish, salamander, turtle, chicken, rabbit, and a human. The fraudulent sketches were deliberately misleading. The true forms of these embryos do not show the similarity that Haeckel was purporting<sup>26</sup>.

One of the most common incorrect lessons on evolution has been the teaching of the peppered moths of England. There was some related fraud to this, and the subject is known not to be of evolution at all, but is being taught perhaps unwittingly and in some classrooms at the

---

<sup>24</sup> Milburn, John, "New board restores study of evolution," The Associated Press, The Daily Item, Sunbury, Pa., USA 1/15/01, p. B3.

<sup>25</sup> Compiled from news service reports, "Education board: No creationism in science classes," The Daily Item, Sunbury, Pa., USA 8/4/01, p. A4.

<sup>26</sup> Sarfati, Jonathan, *Refuting Evolution*, Green Forest, Arkansas, USA Master Books, 1999. pp. 85-86.

present. The peppered moth came in mottled lighter and darker varieties, depending on the genes for melanin inherited from its parents. A light gray lichen encrusted certain trees in England. Darker moths were easier to see on the light lichen, so birds ate them more frequently than the light ones. Then the industrial revolution killed the lichen on the trees. The lighter colored moths then stuck out more than the dark, and the trend reversed. This was strictly variation within a kind, not evolution.<sup>27</sup>

Many animal kinds have genes allowing for a broad range of color. For example, there are brown horses and black horses, but that is not evolution. My father grew up on a farm. He told me that the white horses ate more than the brown horses. The only reason they could think of for this was that they had more white horses than brown horses. Okay, that is a joke, but he did tell me that. Jeanne and I had horses, a sorrel and a chestnut. I can tell you that they both ate a lot. I hope God did slow the animals' digestion down a bit for Noah because the barn work was proportional to the amount the horses ate.

Sometimes evolutionists make honest mistakes. Most of us have heard of Brontosaurus, the largest dinosaur known during the time while I was a student. In 1997, I was shocked to find that there never was a Brontosaurus! At a creation science program, Dr. Gary Parker mentioned in passing that the paleontologists had made a mistake and put the wrong skull on the wrong skeleton. Where was the big retraction for that? Here is what one encyclopedia says: *Sauropods, which include giants such as Apatosaurus (formerly known as Brontosaurus) and Diplodocus, descended from prosauropods*<sup>28</sup>. I forgot about this until very recently. My three-year-old grandson, Drew, is very much into dinosaurs. He knows most of their names, but usually puts an extra "us" syllable at the end. He told his Aunt "Jo Jo" that a dinosaur was a particular name. Joanne said, "No, it's a Brontosaurus." She was taught evolution in school only a few years ago, so why was she taught about Brontosaurus?

## NEANDERTHAL VIDEO

I watched a television program entitled *The Last Neanderthal*, about our supposed brutish ancestor. The production of this program was marvelous, but the content is flawed in interpretation. Someone who believes we evolved is forced to back his findings into an evolutionary timeframe of long ages. This also clouds the interpretation of the abilities of the ancient beings. That is, if a Neanderthal lived 250,000 years ago, he had to be very primitive to be connected with beliefs of onward and upward evolution. The Bible indicates the contrary. Our oldest ancestors of 6000 years ago built cities, musical instruments, and items of bronze, an alloy:

And Cain knew his wife; and she conceived, and bore Enoch: and he built a city...(Genesis 4:17)

And (Adah's) brother's name was Jubal: he was the father of all such as handle the harp and pipe. And (his brother) Tubalcain, an instructor of every craftsman in bronze and iron...(Genesis 4:21-22)

Some of the points of *The Last Neanderthal* and the creationist point or counterpoint are:

---

<sup>27</sup> Parker, Gary, *Creation Facts of Life*, Colorado Springs, Colorado, Master Books, 1994, pp72-73)

<sup>28</sup> Excerpted from *Compton's Interactive Encyclopedia*. Copyright © 1994, 1995, 1996, 1997 The Learning Company, Inc. All Rights Reserved.



- *Neanderthals perhaps had complex language (The Last Neanderthal).* There are only God's People, not Neanderthals, Cro Magnons, Homo Africanus, etc. They all spoke from the day of the creation of Adam (author).
- *Neanderthals lived in Europe and the Middle East hundreds of thousands of years ago.* We agree with the location for early man. The long ages agree only with evolutionary theory, and are clearly contradicted by the Bible.
- *Lived in small groups. Cared for one another. Hunters/gatherers. Crude tools. Buried their dead.* Of course. First of all, we started from 2 people. We were families from the day Adam and Eve had their first son. God gave us every herb for meat. We did not eat meat until after the flood. Winchester would not begin mass-producing rifles until thousands of years later.
- *Disappeared suddenly.* Several possibilities. Antediluvians were buried in the flood. Others scattered quickly after the confusion at Babel. Others picked up and moved from time to time.
- *Neanderthals had large bones, large brains, were muscular.* Compare Eskimos to Native Americans to Europeans to Asians. We are all one "race" (see chapter 10), but we can be built differently. Sit on a bench at a mall sometime and watch the shoppers walk by. Look at their skull shapes. You see all different shapes; maybe some even a bit like a "typical Neanderthal."
- *A new "predecessor," Cro Magnon, was found in France. His skull was different than Neanderthal, he was taller, lighter boned, ate a better diet, made jewelry.* I am fairly average-everything. There are thousands of a breed called "professional athlete" that are taller than me, weigh more, have a better diet, and have more jewelry. We cohabitate in the USA. The video says Neanderthal and Cro Magnon might have cohabitated in the Middle East.
- *A second group came "out-of-Africa" and either 1. displaced all others including Neanderthal, or 2. Mixed and merged with the others.* Perhaps Noah's family re-populating the earth.

## WALKING WITH DINOSAURS (TV MOVIE)

This video also was very well done in terms of production. My grandsons loved it. The dinosaurs were so realistic and colorful. The production was put in terms of a narrative that required a story and some assumptions. What they came up with was amazing. My comments are as follows:

- *An asteroid 25 million years ago ended the dinosaur age including colossal sea monsters and flying reptiles (Walking with Dinosaurs).* Naturalists have not been able to determine why the dinosaurs are all gone. They look to a catastrophic answer, and this is their leading current theory. There are many extinct animals. After the Noahic Flood, the animals that disembarked on the dry ground were on a new earth. Many creatures were in disfavor by the new climactic conditions (author).
- *Hundreds of Coelophysis were found drowned from a flash flood or were stuck in a mud trap at Ghost Ranch in New Mexico.* How about a Biblical flood?
- *Since dinosaurs are the ancestors of fish, amphibians, and reptiles, and the descendants of dinosaurs, the birds, all use color and see color, it is a logical conclusion that*

*dinosaurs could see in color and made use of color.* Talk about a theory inside a theory inside a theory! A PhD stated this dogmatically, which is pretty presumptuous when evolution is only a theory. Another scientist admitted, “all they have are bones and stones, and then they have to speculate.”

- *Diplodocus makes seasonal migrations. A mile-long colony of Iguanadons is shown migrating north.* Another scientist says he found many Iguanadon tracks in one location. He thinks they were migrating because all the tracks went in one direction. For a proper study or speculation, hundreds or thousands of such sets of tracks would have to be found to make a reasonable assumption like that. If you had only ever watched one pitch of a baseball game, you could say, “Yeah, I saw baseball. One guy throws the ball and one guy with a wooden stick watches a guy behind him catch it.” So, like one pitch not telling the whole story of baseball, one set of tracks does not necessarily point to migration.
- *After 160 million years the reign of dinosaurs is about to end. In the Gulf of Mexico, an asteroid 2 miles in diameter plunges to earth. Now comes a tidal wave of smoke and dust that will darken the skies for years to come. In its wake, a hale of molten rocks and ash, followed by a catastrophic change in climate. (Fade to black).* Why did something that bad only kill the dinosaurs? Why not just the big ones? Why the sea creatures, too? Why not everything? Maybe there was a worldwide flood. No, scientists could never buy a worldwide flood. It must be a big asteroid! Wait, does the Bible say anything about an asteroid? If so, something else is needed.

## COMPROMISE: DOES THAT MEAN THE BIBLE IS WRONG?

Do scientists think they are ahead of the Bible? “No, no the Bible is wrong. It is archaic material written long ago by people that barely understood fire.” Oh, yeah?

- *The Bible says there was a worldwide flood.* The fossil record shows evidence of a worldwide flood.
- *The Bible says the world is round. It is he that sitteth upon the circle of the earth, and the inhabitants thereof are as grasshoppers; that stretcheth out the heavens as a curtain, and spreadeth them out as a tent to dwell in: (Isaiah 40:22).* The scientists one day discovered the world is round. Remember, before that, scientists thought the world was flat!
- *The earth is hanging in space. He stretcheth out the north over the empty place, and hangeth the earth upon nothing. (Job 26:7).* Scientists first believed that Atlas carried the world upon his shoulders. The earth is hanging upon nothing.
- *All of us are descendents of one woman, Eve.* Scientists now recognize this as the prevalent theory if not fact.
- *The Bible says the earth was divided in the days of Peleg.* The earth was divided. This could refer to continental drift, the shifting of the tectonic plates.

## HYBRIDS

Some animals can “cross breed,” resulting in sterile offspring. That is, both parents are the same “kind” (comp. Gen. 1) but not the same breed or type. For example, a horse and a donkey are both equine, but, well, one is a horse and one is a donkey. They probably descended

from the same Biblical “kind.” After many years of isolation, two separate breeds were established. Their genes line up well enough to reproduce, but their offspring cannot mate. A horse and a donkey cross breed to produce a mule. This is a profitable union, as a mule has desirable traits inherited from the breeds of both parents.

Hybrids are good evidence that there may have been far fewer “kinds” aboard Noah’s ark than one would think. Likewise, fewer at creation. We might wonder why there were so many different animals ages ago that no longer are here, such as dinosaurs. We might ask why God would create in this fashion. Did He not know about the ones that would go extinct? Of course He did.

We must remember that our planet has gone through many stages of which God had foreknowledge. There was the earth before first sin (how lush that must have been). After man was cast from Eden, the earth continued to be in a global greenhouse effect until “the windows of heaven opened,” contributing to Noah’s flood. After the flood there were drastic changes including an ice age, followed by the world as we know it today.

Other examples of hybrid animals are crosses between lions and tigers, bobcats and housecats, coyotes and dogs, and horses and zebras. The mule by far is the most useful hybrid. Other useful hybrids include some cattle, pigs, and certain chickens.

## QUESTIONS AND THEORIES ABOUT CREATION

- SIX DAYS- Why did it take so long? God is all knowing and all-powerful. He could have made it all in one day. Or could He? What is a day? Time was nonexistent before creation. God had to create time. Maybe it was harder to create “time” than to create what He created.
- A DAY IS AS A THOUSAND YEARS- Before the year 2000, the doomsayers were quite vocal, like a witch on Halloween. I remember hearing many times; “The Lord said I will arise on the third day. The Bible says in II Peter 3:8 that with the Lord a day is as a thousand years. Now that we are turning to the third thousand years, or the third day, Jesus will return. Are you ready?” I am very glad that these worriers got some people to think about salvation, but they missed the point on the thousand years. This verse merely means that God is outside of time.
- A DAY IS AS A THOUSAND YEARS, LET’S TRY IT AGAIN- “Since science has proven evolution, therefore God couldn’t have created in 6 ordinary days, then he did it in 6,000 years. Ah, that fits better.” No, God did not say that. I wonder if there was ever a time in history that more people called God a liar than do nowadays. Think of the scariest conflict you have experienced with authority. A 6’-4” cop, in a bad mood, on a bad day tells you he clocked you 15 mph over the speed limit. Exactly how are you planning to call him “a no good low-down dirty stupid liar?” Think it through again with God. Are you calling God a liar?
- THEISTIC EVOLUTION- This is a compromise where God’s People say, “God created everything, and evolution is how He did it.” This still calls God a hoax on the 6-day deal. It also means that there was death before sin (evolution requires struggle-and-death, struggle-and-death). It also makes God erroneous on the sin thing, which would screw up the salvation thing.
- GAP THEORY- Another way to get around the six days and young earth is the Gap Theory. This theory places millions of years in between the first two verses of the Bible, with Lucifer at the helm. Lucifer rebels, God wipes everything out with “Lucifer’s

Flood,” God recreates (it means death before Adam’s sin again), says everything is very good (including Lucifer at that time)- it does not work. Do you see a trend here? The only way that works is the way God said. He must be really smart.

- STARLIGHT- If the earth is young and the stars are billions of light years away, why can we see the light from these stars? It should not be here yet. Did you see “*Back to the Future?*” In the words of the professor, “You’re not thinking fourth dimensionally.” God made the stars. God made the light. Do you think it would occur to Him to make the light beams in place?
- HOW ABOUT A FLOOD?- My favorite paleontologist is Dr. Gary Parker. An expression he uses a lot after laying out fossil evidence and asking, “What would do this,” is “How about a flood?” Of course the entire fossil record just screams out “Noahic Flood.” The fossil record could be the best evidence for the historicity of the Bible, and against evolution.
- HOW ABOUT AN ICE AGE?- The natural occurrence after the flood was an ice age, and there definitely was one. There are theories involving different scenarios, but the simplest to me seems the most likely. Prior to Noah’s Flood, there was a canopy of waters above the firmament that created a greenhouse effect around the earth. During the torrents, this canopy was depleted. Suddenly the earth was covered with water. The poles became sub-zero. Ice Age.
- IF I WERE THE BOSS- I guess my sense of humor would have me do some things differently. Like the platypus. I would have made more animals like the platypus to mess with the evolutionists. I would have put toe tags on the animals buried in the flood with patent numbers and dates. I would have buried a woolly mammoth with a WWJD license plate.

## ABOUT GOD

If I could only *prove* God exists! The frustration is that all the proof is there. Those that do not believe do not because they do not want to. Did you ever see the chart that shows mountains, lowlands, streams, rivers, and oceans? Clouds are drawn above the mountains, raining upon them, with the liquid of life flowing to these bodies of water. The water in the ocean evaporates, forms clouds, and moves to the mountains to renew the cycle. It is the elusive perpetual motion machine. I see that as God’s way to distribute the only element as important as air all over the world to everywhere it is needed. I suppose an evolutionist thinks we just got lucky, because he does not want to find God. One more fact about water- possibly the only place in the cosmos that water exists in liquid form is on earth.

Retired business tycoon Sir John Templeton is investing his money to “prove God<sup>29</sup>.” His generosity is commendable, but he is squandering his money. Again, the “proof” is already in front of our noses, but we cannot see it. Example: woodpecker- how does it (and so many other animals) evolve an eye to see where to fly, an ear to hear its prey, a long sticky tongue to nab its quarry, a sheath wrapped around its head so it can put the tongue away, a hard bill, a shock-absorbing skull, the reflex to blink with every peck so its eyes don’t pop out? How could arms become wings, skin, hair, or scales become feathers? Who wrote the code for DNA? Perhaps we should look for proof in a different direction.

I have watched a television program a few times called *Touched by an Angel*. One

---

<sup>29</sup> AP, Williamsport PA Sun Gazette, 4/7/2002, p. A-4.

episode was about parents who did not believe in God, and a teenage daughter who was looking for God. The father was a science teacher. The daughter tried to prove God physically. She eventually saw her mistake and announced that while gazing at the stars, she had an overwhelming urge to be thankful. She felt that this urge could only be because there is someone to thank- God. The parents came to believe in God in the short timeframe of the program. The family was huddled at the end, the mother dying of cancer, and one angel asked another, “How long do they have together?” As I choked back my own tears, the second angel replied, “Forever.”

Thou art worthy, O Lord, to receive glory and honour and power: for thou hast created all things, and for thy pleasure they are and were created. (Revelation 4:11.)

## A CALL TO PARENTS

<sup>13</sup>And they brought young children to him, that he should touch them: and his disciples rebuked those that brought them. <sup>14</sup>But when Jesus saw it, he was much displeased, and said unto them, Suffer the little children to come unto me, and forbid them not: for of such is the kingdom of God. <sup>15</sup>Verily I say unto you, Whosoever shall not receive the kingdom of God as a little child, he shall not enter therein. <sup>16</sup>And he took them up in his arms, put his hands upon them, and blessed them. (Mark 10:13-16)

I have been all fired-up about fighting the evolutionistic thinkers in court, proving the scientists wrong with factual science of our own, and whatever else would help us get children to hear about the Biblical creation facts. It took an elementary school student to show me the way. A youngster came into my wife’s library class very excited about a book she wanted to share with her classmates. She asked Jeanne to read it to them. The book had wonderful stories of dinosaurs in the Garden of Eden and on the ark with Noah.

This book, *The Great Dinosaur Mystery and the Bible*, by Paul S. Taylor, and others like it are a big part of the answer to my cause. If we teach our children that Biblical creation is a “faith the facts fit,” it will be much easier for them to hold onto the doctrines of Genesis as they mature. Satan’s method is to chip away at the foundations of faith, let us chip away at the foundation of his lies.

Unfortunately, Jeanne could not read the book to the class because of school policy pertaining to religious materials. The child allowed Jeanne to bring the book home to read to our pre-school age granddaughter, Mariah. She enjoyed the book immensely. (Please see Recommended Reading for Children for information on this.)

## CONCLUSION

Would evolutionist-scientists compromise their beliefs with the Bible? Remember the university professor who told creationist Ken Ham he would not believe Noah’s ark were true if they dragged it down Main Street! Christians know that tens of thousands of people saw Jesus in the flesh. Did they all believe who He was, even when they saw Him perform miracles? No. Those who wanted to believe saw, and they believed. Those who did not want to believe saw,

and they did not believe. *And they were offended in Him. But Jesus said unto them, A prophet is not without honor, except in his own country, and in his own house. And He did not many mighty works there because of their unbelief.* (Matthew 13:57-58).

This section has been enjoyable to research and write. There is something else that was written a long time ago that is more right than what I could write, and much more important. In creation versus evolution, we seek the truth in where we came from. We believe the one who was there. Another truth we seek is culmination of Biblical prophecy. Who will be the Redeemer and Conqueror that we are promised? Has He already come?





## PART II THE MESSIAH



# Redeemer & Conqueror

## Chapter 4. Was a Messiah Promised?



Don't forget this, O guilty ones. And don't forget the many times I clearly told you what was going to happen in the future. For I am God--I only--and there is no other like me who can tell you what is going to happen. All I say will come to pass, for I do whatever I wish. I will call that swift bird of prey from the east--that man Cyrus from far away. And he will come and do my bidding. I have said I would do it and I will. Listen to me, you stubborn, evil men! For I am offering you my deliverance; not in the distant future, but right now! I am ready to save you, and I will restore Jerusalem, and Israel, who is my glory. (Isaiah 46:8-13 LVB.)

The first three chapters of this book give convincing testimony to the belief in Biblical (literal 6-day) creation as God stated (inspired Moses to write). The importance is not whether one believes in special creation, creation in six days, or “God did it through evolution,” as those

issues are not a matter or condition of one's salvation or redemption. The importance is that one sees that the Word of God is true.

If one looks at the evidence around us and concludes, "yes, God did it as He said, the Bible is literal truth," then we are on the track of importance. If the creation account is true, the worldwide flood, tower of Babel, and so forth, might we believe all of God's Word? Might the prophecies of the messiah be true? Will He still come, is He here now, or was He here already?

For this chapter and the next chapter, the Scripture shall speak for itself, with the exception of brief narratives. Let your ears hear the Word of God.

## A PERFECT WORLD

Would a Perfect and Just God have a Plan? The creation was an obvious Plan. If God can bring all into being by his word in 6 days, He could have done it in one day, or a half-day. God took a week because He had to create time. Time had not existed before creation week. God established "signs, seasons, days, and years" (Genesis 1:14). When the work of creation week was complete on the sixth day, God declared His creation "very good" (Genesis 1:31). On the seventh day, He rested.

## SOMETHING WENT WRONG

At the end of day six, when the creation was very good, it was a perfect world. There was as yet no death (ruling out the possibility of struggle-and-death evolution), there was no sin, and no Satan. A fundamental question arises- if God is Perfect, He has a Plan, and creation is perfect, what happened? Scripture tells us God has foreknowledge. Why did He not tweak things so that Satan and a third of the angels did not fall? Why did God not simply omit the tree in the midst of the Garden of Eden? The problem came not from God's planning, but from the free will He gave His highest creation:

He, Shaddai (the Almighty), is far beyond our reach. Supreme in power, in equity, excelling in saving justice, yet no oppressor, (Job 37:23 NJB).

Perhaps the tree was a test that He knew we would fail. But in His promise to save us (or provide a way to save us) from destruction, He had to have a plan of create, sustain, save, and live with in glory forever.

Many are the plans in the mind of a man, but it is the purpose of the Lord that will be established. (Proverbs 19:21 RSV).

For I know the plans I have for you, says the Lord, plans for welfare and not for evil, to give you a future and a hope. Then you will call upon me and come and pray to me, and I will hear you. You will seek me and find me; when you seek me with all your heart, (Jeremiah 29:11-13 RSV).

In the beginning, there was one simple commandment for us to obey: (*of the fruit of the tree which is in the midst of the garden, God hath said, Ye shall not eat of it* Gen. 3:3). We sinned against God because of failure from one temptation. Can we understand the ways of the

Lord?

Even so, God loves us: *And when Abram was ninety years old and nine, the Lord appeared to Abram, and said unto him, I am the Almighty God; walk before me, and be thou perfect. And I will make my covenant between me and thee, and will multiply thee exceedingly.* (Genesis 17:1-2).

## WHY NOT TELL US EVERYTHING?

Yea, the stork in the heaven knoweth her appointed times; and the turtle and the crane and the swallow observe the time of their coming; but my people know not the judgment of the Lord. (Jeremiah 8:7).

We do not need to know everything because God knows everything. We merely need to be faithful and obedient. Our guidance is His written word. If one verse of scripture declares the Lord almighty, must we find other scriptures to verify the first? No, but it sure is comforting- so many scriptures are included in this text “just to be sure.”

God had to make (create) us, tell us what to do, and have a backup plan when we choked on our silver spoon. Our failures are called sins. As we know, the shedding of blood is decreed for the one and only way to be cleansed of our sins (Genesis 4:4). God also had a plan for a substitute who, as a lamb, would bear the sins of His people:

All we like sheep have gone astray; we have turned every one to his own way; and the Lord hath laid on him the iniquity of us all. He was oppressed, and he was afflicted, yet he opened not his mouth: he is brought as a lamb to the slaughter, and as a sheep before her shearers is dumb, so he openeth not his mouth. (Isaiah 53:6-7).

This passage refers to the Messiah who would come and bear our sins. The Messiah is promised many times in the Bible. In the next chapter, these scriptures will be listed along with scripture indicating fulfillment of the prophecies.

## OTHER MESSIANIC PROMISES

The Messiah is promised throughout the Hebrew Bible (Old Testament). The Christians claim that Jesus Christ is the Messiah because of their beliefs that he fulfilled the Old Testament prophecies (see next chapter). The Christians also claim that many, if not most, of the Jews were looking for the “wrong” Messiah, the one that was to once-and-for all conquer their enemies.

How wonderful would it be to have a Messiah come and totally annihilate all terrorists around the world? How about in the last century to have defeated the enemies of the Jews and the enemies of the free?

The confusion between Christian Messianic beliefs and of many Jews is that Christians believe Messiah Act 1 came 2000 years ago to save us from sin. Christians believe that the Messiah Act 2 will occur when Christ returns to fulfill Biblical prophecy and conquer our (His) enemies. Further, the Christian belief is that many first-century Jews rejected Christ because He did not do what they wanted Him to do, and many were upset that while claiming to be the Messiah, He declared He also came to save the Gentiles. Many Jews of that day resented this.

Many Jews did believe, and were the first Christians. We often lose sight that Gentiles were not the first Christians.

Here are a few prophecies of the Messiah. More will follow in other sections of this chapter and the next chapter.

Therefore I will look unto the Lord; I will wait for the God of my salvation: my God will hear me. Rejoice not against me, O mine enemy: when I fall, I shall arise; when I sit in darkness, the Lord shall be a light unto me. I will bear the indignation of the Lord, because I have sinned against him, until he plead my cause, and execute judgment for me: he will bring me forth to the light, and I shall behold his righteousness. (Micah 7:7-9).

For unto us a child is born, unto us a son is given: and the government shall be upon his shoulder: and his name shall be called Wonderful, Counsellor, The mighty God, the everlasting Father, The Prince of Peace. Of the increase of his government and peace there shall be no end, upon the throne of David, and upon his kingdom, to order it, and to establish it with judgment and with justice from henceforth even for ever. The zeal of the Lord of hosts will perform this. (Isaiah 9:6-7).

When God promises us something, it has to be fulfilled. Only He knows when. If we want redemption, we must abide by his commandments and bide our time. He loves us so much that he made a loving plan with loving promises.

## PROMISES

God has made many promises to His chosen people. He has always kept His promises. Following is a listing of some of His wonderful assurances:

Come and see the marvels of God, his awesome deeds for the children of Adam: (Psalms 66:5 NJB).

Thy kingdom is an everlasting kingdom, and thy dominion endureth throughout all generations. (Psalms 145:13).

I will say of the Lord, He is my refuge and my fortress: my God; in him will I trust. Surely he shall deliver thee from the snare of the fowler, and from the noisome pestilence. (Psalms 91:2-3).

And they shall fight against thee; but they shall not prevail against thee; for I am with thee, saith the Lord, to deliver thee. (Jeremiah 1:19).

Therefore the Lord waits to be gracious to you; therefore he exalts himself to show mercy to you. For the Lord is a God of justice; blessed are all those who wait for him. (Isaiah 30:18 RSV).

Blessed be the Lord, that hath given rest unto his people Israel, according to all

that he promised: there hath not failed one word of all his good promise, which he promised by the hand of Moses his servant. (1 Kings 8:56).

God has always been true to His people, but it is often only a one-way street, as we shall examine in a later chapter. As the Lord God wrote the Ten Commandments on stone tablets with his finger, the Israelites built a golden statue to worship. Not only were they often fickle, their actions often defied logic.

## CHOSEN BY GOD: PROMISE IS NOT WITHOUT DUTY

God chose the Israelites to be His people because they alone loved Him. They were also expected to communicate salvation to the majority (Gentiles). Here are some of God's promises to His people:

<sup>7</sup>The Lord did not set his love upon you, nor choose you, because ye were more in number than any people; for ye were the fewest of all people: <sup>8</sup>But because the Lord loved you, and because he would keep the oath which he had sworn unto your fathers, hath the Lord brought you out with a mighty hand, and redeemed you out of the house of bondmen, from the hand of Pharaoh king of Egypt. <sup>9</sup>Know therefore that the Lord thy God, he is God, the faithful God, which keepeth covenant and mercy with them that love him and keep his commandments to a thousand generations; <sup>10</sup>And repayeth them that hate him to their face, to destroy them: he will not be slack to him that hateth him, he will repay him to his face. <sup>11</sup>Thou shalt therefore keep the commandments, and the statutes, and the judgments, which I command thee this day, to do them. <sup>12</sup>Wherefore it shall come to pass, if ye hearken to these judgments, and keep, and do them, that the Lord thy God shall keep unto thee the covenant and the mercy which he swore unto thy fathers: <sup>13</sup>And he will love thee, and bless thee, and multiply thee: he will also bless the fruit of thy womb, and the fruit of thy land, thy corn, and thy wine, and thine oil, the increase of thy kine, and the flocks of thy sheep, in the land which he swore unto thy fathers to give thee. <sup>14</sup>Thou shalt be blessed above all people: there shall not be male or female barren among you, or among your cattle. <sup>15</sup>And the Lord will take away from thee all sickness, and will put none of the evil diseases of Egypt, which thou knowest, upon thee; but will lay them upon all them that hate thee. (Deuteronomy 7:7-15).

And they entered into a covenant to seek the Lord God of their fathers with all their heart and with all their soul; (2 Chronicles 15:12).

<sup>24</sup>For I will take you from among the heathen, and gather you out of all countries, and will bring you into your own land. <sup>25</sup>Then will I sprinkle clean water upon you, and ye shall be clean: from all your filthiness, and from all your idols, will I cleanse you. <sup>26</sup>A new heart also will I give you, and a new spirit will I put within you: and I will take away the stony heart out of your flesh, and I will give you an heart of flesh. <sup>27</sup>And I will put my spirit within you, and cause you to walk in my statutes, and ye shall keep my judgments, and do them. (Ezekiel 36:24-27).

<sup>47</sup>The Lord liveth; and blessed be my rock; and exalted be the God of the rock of my salvation. <sup>48</sup>It is God that avengeth me, and that bringeth down the people under me. <sup>49</sup>And that bringeth me forth from mine enemies: thou also hast lifted me up on high above them that rose up against me: thou hast delivered me from the violent man. <sup>50</sup>Therefore I will give thanks unto thee, O Lord, among the heathen, and I will sing praises unto thy name. <sup>51</sup>He is the tower of salvation for his king: and sheweth mercy to his anointed, unto David, and to his seed for evermore. (2 Samuel 22:47-51).

That He loved the Jews is obvious from those Scriptures, yet his people behaved like children who require constant attention. He freed them from bondage in Egypt, on the way to a promised land they disobeyed and were chastened. Then they re-started on the right track, for a while, and the next thing you know they are in trouble again. “Tommy, do not do that! That is better, that is a good boy. Hey! Why did you start that again? Get in your time-out chair!”

## COMMANDMENTS & OBEDIENCE

*For thou shalt worship no other god: for the Lord, whose name is Jealous, is a jealous God: (Exodus 34:14)*

Re-read the preceding verse. Put yourself in Moses shoes. You have returned from the mountain where you stood in the glory of God. God has given you ten laws. The first of the ten is “Thou shalt have no other gods before me.” The second is “thou shalt not make any graven image.” The first thing you see is your people worshipping a golden calf, violating both of these commandments. No wonder he broke the tablets! Read these commandments:

If ye forsake the Lord, and serve strange gods, then he will turn and do you hurt, and consume you, after that he hath done you good. (Joshua 24:20).

And thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thine heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy might (Deuteronomy 6:5).

And said, I beseech thee, O Lord God of heaven, the great and terrible God, that keepeth covenant and mercy for them that love him and observe his commandments: (Nehemiah 1:5).

Still, the Lord loves His people. To what purpose? All of His people from the Old Testament stories are long deceased. What gift, what redemption did God have for them? It was not necessarily a great life on earth in those times. They suffered, yet believed. While they were in Egyptian bondage, many died and never saw deliverance, salvation, or redemption. What did God mean?

## DELIVERANCE FROM ENEMIES

Not only does God promise to save His people from their enemies, He offers hope to a weary nation. It is not difficult to understand why the human mind seeks a Conquering Messiah.

And Moses said unto the people, Fear ye not, stand still, and see the salvation of the Lord, which he will shew to you to day: for the Egyptians whom ye have seen to day, ye shall see them again no more for ever. The Lord shall fight for you, and ye shall hold your peace. (Exodus 14:13-14).

Thus saith the Lord unto you, Be not afraid nor dismayed by reason of this great multitude; for the battle is not yours, but God's. (2 Chronicles 20:15b).

Be strong and of a good courage, fear not, nor be afraid of them: for the Lord thy God, he it is that doth go with thee; he will not fail thee, nor forsake thee. (Deuteronomy 31:6).

I will call on the Lord, who is worthy to be praised: so shall I be saved from mine enemies. (2 Samuel 22:4).

Through God we shall do valiantly: for he it is that shall tread down our enemies. (Psalms 60:12).

For the Lord your God is he that goeth with you, to fight for you against your enemies, to save you. (Deuteronomy 20:4).

God is not merely promising victory, but to accompany us into battle, whatever or wherever the battle is. The only names given are those of past enemies. The Lord will honor His promise no matter who is the foe.

## DELIVERANCE FROM SINS

The more important issue (at least to Christians, and I speak from that viewpoint) is deliverance from sins. The creation was about 6000 years ago. Our life spans are but a spec of that timeline. But how long is eternity, and we look for salvation to be eternal. What good is it to win the battle with your enemies of this life, but lose the war and spend eternity apart from God?

God promises a Redeemer, a Savior- the Messiah.

Where is another God like you, who pardons the sins of the survivors among his people? You cannot stay angry with your people, for you love to be merciful. (Micah 7:18 LVB).

I have blotted out, as a thick cloud, thy transgressions, and, as a cloud, thy sins: return unto me; for I have redeemed thee. (Isaiah 44:22).

There is no God else beside me; a just God and a Saviour; there is none beside me. Look unto me, and be ye saved, all the ends of the earth: for I am God, and there is none else. Isaiah 45:21b-22).

The Lord thy God in the midst of thee is mighty; he will save, he will rejoice over thee with joy; he will rest in his love, he will joy over thee with singing.



Zephaniah 3:17).

My soul, wait thou only upon God; for my expectation is from him. He only is my rock and my salvation: he is my defence; I shall not be moved. In God is my salvation and my glory: the rock of my strength, and my refuge, is in God. (Psalms 62:5-7).

The Lord redeemeth the soul of his servants: and none of them that trust in him shall be desolate. (Psalms 34:22).

Rejoice the soul of thy servant: for unto thee, O Lord, do I lift up my soul. For thou, Lord, art good, and ready to forgive; and plenteous in mercy unto all them that call upon thee. (Psalms 86:4-5).

Eternal life is the conclusion of the promises of God and of the purpose of the Messiah. The Messiah was indeed promised and part of God's plan.

Who is the Messiah? If you saw Him, would you know Him?

Read on.



## Chapter 5. Is Jesus Christ the Messiah?



What is the difference between a Jew and a Gentile? The first Christians, followers of Christ, were Jews. It is hard to state who makes up today's Christians, because of conversions over the centuries from diverse cultures, but some of today's Christians might be descendents of the Jews that followed Christ 2000 years ago.

The important question, what is the difference in the religions of Judaism and Christianity? A Jewish friend asked me if I thought that Christians are (Jews in religion) who believe that Jesus Christ is the Messiah. My answer, "Absolutely."

A fundamental Christian takes the Bible very literally on matters that are clearly literal. Therefore a Christian would or should view Hebrew Bible (Old Testament) content the same as a Jew would. A fundamental difference might be on views of prophecy and the Messiah. The Christian believes that Messianic prophecy is just that, while some Jews do not believe the Messiah to be more than symbolism of hope.

Whenever a Christian discusses the Messiah, his conversation quickly turns to the New Testament. Is it acceptable to use this text when discussing Jesus Christ with a Jew who does not accept the word of the New Testament? One must start somewhere. To answer a question with a question, can one teach math without a math book or chemistry without a chemistry book? The text must be accepted as a source to be searched to see if it holds up against the test of time. If the New Testament stands against the Old Testament- perhaps it is true!

As foretold, I am taking one more chapter "off," and will allow Scripture to speak for me. If Biblical creation is true to God's Word, what else could these Scriptures mean? Christians view the following Old Testament prophecies and New Testament scriptures as promises and fulfillment. In Biblical sequence, all from the King James Version:

SON OF GOD: Prophecy: I will declare the decree: the Lord hath said unto me, Thou art my son; this day have I begotten thee. Psalms 2:7.

*Fulfillment: He shall be great, and shall be called the Son of the Highest: and the Lord God shall give unto him the throne of his father David: And the angel answered and said unto her, The Holy Ghost shall come upon thee, and the power of the Highest shall overshadow thee: therefore also that holy thing which shall be born of thee shall be called the Son of God. Luke 1:32, 35.*

DESCENDENT OF ABRAHAM: And I will establish my covenant between me and thee and thy seed after thee in their generations for an everlasting covenant, to be a God unto thee, and to thy seed after thee. Genesis 17:7.

And in thy seed shall all the nations of the earth be blessed; because thou hast obeyed my voice. Genesis 22:18.

*Now to Abraham and his seed were the promises made. He saith not, And to seeds, as of many; but as of one, And to thy seed, which is Christ. Galatians 3:16.*

DESCENDENT OF ISAAC: And God said unto Abraham, Let it not be grievous in thy sight because of the lad, and because of thy bondwoman; in all that Sarah hath said unto thee, hearken unto her voice; for in Isaac shall thy seed be called. And also of the son of the bondwoman will I make a nation, because he is thy seed. Genesis 21:12-13.

*By faith Abraham, when he was tried, offered up Isaac: and he that had received the promises offered up his only begotten son, Of whom it was said, That in Isaac shall thy seed be called: Accounting that God was able to raise him up, even from the dead; from whence also he received him in a figure. Hebrews 11:17-17.*

DESCENDENT OF DAVID: The Lord hath sworn in truth unto David; he will not turn from it; Of the fruit of thy body will I set upon thy throne. Psalms 132:11.

Behold, the days come, saith the Lord, that I will raise unto David a righteous Branch, and a King shall reign and prosper, and shall execute judgment and justice in the earth. Jeremiah 23:5.

*And when he had removed him, he raised up unto them David to be their king; to whom also he gave testimony, and said, I have found David the son of Jesse, a man after mine own heart, which shall fulfil all my will. Of this man's seed hath God according to his promise raised unto Israel a Saviour, Jesus: Acts 13:22-23.*

*Concerning his Son Jesus Christ our Lord, which was made of the seed of David according to the flesh; Romans 1:3.*

ESTABLISHMENT OF KINGDOM ON EARTH: The sceptre shall not depart from Judah, nor a lawgiver from between his feet, until Shiloh come; and unto him shall the gathering of the people be. Genesis 49:10.

Seventy weeks are determined upon thy people and upon thy holy city, to finish the transgression, and to make an end of sins, and to make reconciliation for iniquity, and to bring in everlasting righteousness, and to seal up the vision and prophecy, and to anoint the most Holy. Know therefore and understand, that from the going forth of the commandment to restore and to build Jerusalem unto the Messiah the Prince shall be seven weeks, and threescore and two weeks: the street shall be built again, and the wall, even in troublous times. Daniel 9:24-25.

*For all these things must come to pass, but the end is not yet. For nation shall rise against nation, and kingdom against kingdom: and there shall be famines, and pestilences, and earthquakes, in divers places. All these are the beginning of sorrows. Then shall they deliver you up to be afflicted, and shall kill you: and ye shall be hated of all nations for my name's sake. And then shall many be offended, and shall betray one another, and shall hate one another. And*

*many false prophets shall rise, and shall deceive many. And because iniquity shall abound, the love of many shall wax cold. But he that shall endure unto the end, the same shall be saved. When ye therefore shall see the abomination of desolation, spoken of by Daniel the prophet, stand in the holy place. From Matthew 24: 6-15.*

**VIRGIN BIRTH OF MESSIAH:** Therefore the Lord himself shall give you a sign; Behold, a virgin shall conceive, and bear a son, and shall call his name Immanuel. Isaiah 7:14.

*When as his mother Mary was espoused to Joseph, before they came together, she was found with child of the Holy Ghost. Then Joseph her husband, being a just man, and not willing to make her a publick example, was minded to put her away privily. But while he thought on these things, behold, the angel of the Lord appeared unto him in a dream, saying, Joseph, thou son of David, fear not to take unto thee Mary thy wife: for that which is conceived in her is of the Holy Ghost. Matthew 1:18-20.*

**PLACE OF BIRTH:** But thou, Bethlehem Ephratah, though thou be little among the thousands of Judah, yet out of thee shall he come forth unto me that is to be ruler in Israel; whose goings forth have been from of old, from everlasting. Micah 5:2.

*And Joseph also went up from Galilee, out of the city of Nazareth, into Judaea, unto the city of David, which is called Bethlehem; (because he was of the house and lineage of David:) To be taxed with Mary his espoused wife, being great with child. And so it was, that, while they were there, the days were accomplished that she should be delivered. Luke 2:4-6.*

**ALL SHALL KNOW HE IS GOD:** The kings of Tarshish and of the isles shall bring presents: the kings of Sheba and Seba shall offer gifts. Yea, all kings shall fall down before him: all nations shall serve him. Psalms 72:10-11.

*Now when Jesus was born in Bethlehem of Judaea in the days of Herod the king, behold, there came wise men from the east to Jerusalem, Saying, Where is he that is born King of the Jews? for we have seen his star in the east, and are come to worship him. Matthew 2:1-2.*

**KILLING OF CHILDREN- ATTEMPT TO SLAY MESSIAH:** Thus saith the Lord; A voice was heard in Ramah, lamentation, and bitter weeping; Rachel weeping for her children refused to be comforted for her children, because they were not. Jeremiah 31:15.

*Then Herod, when he saw that he was mocked of the wise men, was exceeding wroth, and sent forth, and slew all the children that were in Bethlehem. Then was fulfilled that which was spoken by Jeremy the prophet, saying, In Rama was there a voice heard, lamentation, and weeping, and great mourning, Rachel weeping for her children, and would not be comforted, because they are not. Matthew 2:16a, 17-18.*

**PREPARER (JOHN THE BAPTIST):** The voice of him that crieth in the wilderness, Prepare ye the way of the Lord, make straight in the desert a highway for our God. Isaiah 40:3.

Behold, I will send my messenger, and he shall prepare the way before me; and the Lord, whom ye seek, shall suddenly come to his temple, even the messenger of the covenant, whom ye delight in: behold, he shall come, saith the Lord of hosts. Malachi 3:1.

*In those days came John the Baptist, preaching in the wilderness of Judaea, And saying, Repent ye: for the kingdom of heaven is at hand. For this is he [Messiah] that was spoken of by the prophet Esaias, saying, The voice of one crying in the wilderness, Prepare ye the way of the Lord, make his paths straight. Matthew 3:1-3.*

GOD IN HIM: And the spirit of the Lord shall rest upon him, the spirit of wisdom and understanding, the spirit of counsel and might, the spirit of knowledge and of the fear of the Lord; Isaiah 11:2.

The Spirit of the Lord God is upon me; because the Lord hath anointed me to preach good tidings unto the meek; he hath sent me to bind up the brokenhearted, to proclaim liberty to the captives, and the opening of the prison to them that are bound; Isaiah 61:1.

*And Jesus, when he was baptized, went up straightway out of the water: and, lo, the heavens were opened unto him, and he saw the Spirit of God descending like a dove, and lighting upon him: Matthew 3:16.*

*How God anointed Jesus of Nazareth with the Holy Ghost and with power: who went about doing good, and healing all that were oppressed of the devil; for God was with him. Acts 10:38.*

MESSIAH WILL BE A JEW: The Lord thy God will raise up unto thee a Prophet from the midst of thee, of thy brethren, like unto me; unto him ye shall hearken; According to all that thou desiredst of the Lord thy God in Horeb in the day of the assembly, saying, Let me not hear again the voice of the Lord my God, neither let me see this great fire any more, that I die not. And the Lord said unto me, They have well spoken that which they have spoken. I will raise them up a Prophet from among their brethren, like unto thee, and will put my words in his mouth; and he shall speak unto them all that I shall command him. Deuteronomy 18:15-18.

*And he shall send Jesus Christ, which before was preached unto you: Whom the heaven must receive until the times of restitution of all things, which God hath spoken by the mouth of all his holy prophets since the world began. For Moses truly said unto the fathers, A prophet shall the Lord your God raise up unto you of your brethren, like unto me; him shall ye hear in all things whatsoever he shall say unto you. Acts 3:20-22.*

PRIEST FOREVER: The Lord hath sworn, and will not repent, Thou art a priest for ever after the order of Melchizedek. Psalms 110:4.

*So also Christ glorified not himself to be made an high priest; but he that said unto him, Thou art my Son, to day have I begotten thee. As he saith also in another place, Thou art a priest for ever after the order of Melchisedec. Hebrews 5:5-6.*

A WITNESS TO THE GENTILES, TOO: Nevertheless the dimness shall not be such as was in her vexation, when at the first he lightly afflicted the land of Zebulun and the land of Naphtali, and afterward did more grievously afflict her by the way of the sea, beyond Jordan, in Galilee of the nations. The people that walked in darkness have seen a great light: they that dwell in the land of the shadow of death, upon them hath the light shined. Isaiah 9:1-2.

*Now when Jesus had heard that John was cast into prison, he departed into Galilee; And leaving Nazareth, he came and dwelt in Capernaum, which is upon the sea coast, in the borders of Zabulon and Nephthalim: That it might be fulfilled which was spoken by Esaias the prophet, saying, The land of Zabulon, and the land of Nephthalim, by the way of the sea, beyond Jordan, Galilee of the Gentiles; The people which sat in darkness saw great light; and to them which sat in the region and shadow of death light is sprung up. Matthew 4:12-16.*

TRIUMPHAL ENTRY OF MESSIAH INTO JERUSALEM: Rejoice greatly, O daughter of Zion; shout, O daughter of Jerusalem: behold, thy King cometh unto thee: he is just, and having salvation; lowly, and riding upon an ass, and upon a colt the foal of an ass. Zechariah 9:9.

*And when they drew nigh unto Jerusalem, and were come to Bethphage, unto the mount of Olives, then sent Jesus two disciples, Saying unto them, Go into the village over against you, and*

*straightway ye shall find an ass tied, and a colt with her: loose them, and bring them unto me. And if any man say ought unto you, ye shall say, The Lord hath need of them; and straightway he will send them. All this was done, that it might be fulfilled which was spoken by the prophet, saying, Tell ye the daughter of Sion, Behold, thy King cometh unto thee, meek, and sitting upon an ass, and a colt the foal of an ass. Matthew 21:1-5.*

SPIRITUAL SAVIOR TO ALL: And I will shake all nations, and the desire of all nations shall come: and I will fill this house with glory, saith the Lord of hosts. The silver is mine, and the gold is mine, saith the Lord of hosts. The glory of this latter house shall be greater than of the former, saith the Lord of hosts: and in this place will I give peace, saith the Lord of hosts. Haggai 2:7-9.

*And he came by the Spirit into the temple: and when the parents brought in the child Jesus, to do for him after the custom of the law, Then took he him up in his arms, and blessed God, and said, Lord, now lettest thou thy servant depart in peace, according to thy word: For mine eyes have seen thy salvation, Which thou hast prepared before the face of all people; A light to lighten the Gentiles, and the glory of thy people Israel. Luke 2:27-32.*

JUDGE: Behold my servant, whom I uphold; mine elect, in whom my soul delighteth; I have put my spirit upon him: he shall bring forth judgment to the Gentiles. He shall not cry, nor lift up, nor cause his voice to be heard in the street. Isaiah 42:1-2.

*Then the Pharisees went out, and held a council against him, how they might destroy him. But when Jesus knew it, he withdrew himself from thence: and great multitudes followed him, and he healed them all; And charged them that they should not make him known: That it might be fulfilled which was spoken by Esaias the prophet, saying, Behold my servant, whom I have chosen; my beloved, in whom my soul is well pleased: I will put my spirit upon him, and he shall shew judgment to the Gentiles. He shall not strive, nor cry; neither shall any man hear his voice in the streets. A bruised reed shall he not break, and smoking flax shall he not quench, till he send forth judgment unto victory. Matthew 12:14-20.*

JESUS ANGERED BY GREED AT THE TEMPLE: I am become a stranger unto my brethren, and an alien unto my mother's children. For the zeal of thine house hath eaten me up; and the reproaches of them that reproached thee are fallen upon me. Psalms 69:8-9.

*And his disciples remembered that it was written, The zeal of thine house hath eaten me up. John 2:17.*

MESSIAH TO TEACH IN PARABLES: Give ear, O my people, to my law: incline your ears to the words of my mouth. I will open my mouth in a parable: I will utter dark sayings of old: Psalms 78:1-2.

*All these things spake Jesus unto the multitude in parables; and without a parable spake he not unto them: That it might be fulfilled which was spoken by the prophet, saying, I will open my mouth in parables; I will utter things which have been kept secret from the foundation of the world. Matthew 13:34-35.*

ALMIGHTY. SAVIOR: Say to them that are of a fearful heart, Be strong, fear not: behold, your God will come with vengeance, even God with a recompence; he will come and save you. Then the eyes of the blind shall be opened, and the ears of the deaf shall be unstopped. Then shall the lame man leap as an hart, and the tongue of the dumb sing: for in the wilderness shall waters break out, and streams in the desert. Isaiah 35:4-6.

*Now when John had heard in the prison the works of Christ, he sent two of his disciples, And said unto him, Art thou he that should come, or do we look for another? Jesus answered and said unto them, Go and shew John again those things which ye do hear and see: The blind receive their sight, and the lame walk, the lepers are cleansed, and the deaf hear, the dead are raised up, and the poor have the gospel preached to them. And blessed is he, whosoever shall not be offended in me. Matthew 11:2-6.*

**SCORNE**D BY HIS OWN (THE JEWS): I have trodden the winepress alone; and of the people there was none with me; for I will tread them in mine anger, and trample them in my fury; and their blood shall be sprinkled upon my garments, and I will stain all my raiment. For the day of vengeance is in mine heart, and the year of my redeemed is come. Isaiah 63:3-4.

*That was the true Light, which lighteth every man that cometh into the world. He was in the world, and the world was made by him, and the world knew him not. He came unto his own, and his own received him not. John 1:9-11.*

**WORTHY**: Sanctify the Lord of hosts himself; and let him be your fear, and let him be your dread. And he shall be for a sanctuary; but for a stone of stumbling and for a rock of offence to both the houses of Israel, for a gin (trap) (trap) and for a snare to the inhabitants of Jerusalem. Isaiah 8:13-14.

*But Israel, which followed after the law of righteousness, hath not attained to the law of righteousness. Wherefore? Because they sought it not by faith, but as it were by the works of the law. For they stumbled at that stumblingstone; As it is written, Behold, I lay in Sion a stumblingstone and rock of offence: and whosoever believeth on him shall not be ashamed. Romans 9:31-33.*

**SCORNE**D:\* Thus saith the Lord, the Redeemer of Israel, and his Holy One, to him whom man despiseth, to him whom the nation abhorreth, to a servant of rulers, Kings shall see and arise, princes also shall worship, because of the Lord that is faithful, and the Holy One of Israel, and he shall choose thee. Isaiah 49:7.

*He that hateth me hateth my Father also. If I had not done among them the works which none other man did, they had not had sin: but now have they both seen and hated both me and my Father. But this cometh to pass, that the word might be fulfilled that is written in their law, They hated me without a cause. John 15:23-25.*

\*Scorned for no good reason, a la Carl Sagan scorning a creation scientist.

**HEAD OF THE CHURCH**: The stone which the builders refused is become the head stone of the corner. Psalms 118:22.

*Jesus saith unto them, Did ye never read in the scriptures, The stone which the builders rejected, the same is become the head of the corner: this is the Lord's doing, and it is marvellous in our eyes? Matthew 21:42.*

**SCORNE**D, AGAIN: Why do the heathen rage, and the people imagine a vain thing? The kings of the earth set themselves, and the rulers take counsel together, against the Lord, and against his anointed, saying, Let us break their bands asunder, and cast away their cords from us. Psalms 2:1-3.

*And when they heard that, they lifted up their voice to God with one accord, and said, Lord, thou art God, which hast made heaven, and earth, and the sea, and all that in them is: Who by the*

*mouth of thy servant David hast said, Why did the heathen rage, and the people imagine vain things? The kings of the earth stood up, and the rulers were gathered together against the Lord, and against his Christ. For of a truth against thy holy child Jesus, whom thou hast anointed, both Herod, and Pontius Pilate, with the Gentiles, and the people of Israel, were gathered together, For to do whatsoever thy hand and thy counsel determined before to be done. Acts 4:24-28.*

BETRAYED BY HIS OWN: For it was not an enemy that reproached me; then I could have borne it: neither was it he that hated me that did magnify himself against me; then I would have hid myself from him: But it was thou, a man mine equal, my guide, and mine acquaintance. We took sweet counsel together, and walked unto the house of God in company. Psalms 55:12-14. *I speak not of you all: I know whom I have chosen: but that the scripture may be fulfilled, He that eateth bread with me hath lifted up his heel against me. When Jesus had thus said, he was troubled in spirit, and testified, and said, Verily, verily, I say unto you, that one of you shall betray me. John 13:18, 21.*

BETRAYED FOR A PRICE: And I said unto them, If ye think good, give me my price; and if not, forbear. So they weighed for my price thirty pieces of silver. And the Lord said unto me, Cast it unto the potter: a goodly price that I was prised at of them. And I took the thirty pieces of silver, and cast them to the potter in the house of the Lord. Zechariah 11:12-13. *Then one of the twelve, called Judas Iscariot, went unto the chief priests, And said unto them, What will ye give me, and I will deliver him unto you? And they covenanted with him for thirty pieces of silver. And from that time he sought opportunity to betray him. Matthew 26:14-16.*

ON THE CROSS, GOD TURNED HIS BACK ON THE SIN CHRIST TOOK ON: My God, my God, why hast thou forsaken me? why art thou so far from helping me, and from the words of my roaring? I am poured out like water, and all my bones are out of joint: my heart is like wax; it is melted in the midst of my bowels. My strength is dried up like a potsherd; and my tongue cleaveth to my jaws; and thou hast brought me into the dust of death. Psalms 22:1, 14, 15. *And about the ninth hour Jesus cried with a loud voice, saying, Eli, Eli, lama sabachthani? that is to say, My God, my God, why hast thou forsaken me? Matthew 27:46.*

NOT ATTRACTIVE: <sup>1</sup>Who hath believed our report? and to whom is the arm of the Lord revealed? <sup>2</sup>For he shall grow up before him as a tender plant, and as a root out of a dry ground: he hath no form nor comeliness; and when we shall see him, there is no beauty that we should desire him. <sup>3</sup>He is despised and rejected of men; a man of sorrows, and acquainted with grief: and we hid as it were our faces from him; he was despised, and we esteemed him not. <sup>4</sup>Surely he hath borne our griefs, and carried our sorrows: yet we did esteem him stricken, smitten of God, and afflicted...(see below)

TO BEAR OUR SINS: <sup>5</sup>But he was wounded for our transgressions, he was bruised for our iniquities: the chastisement of our peace was upon him; and with his stripes we are healed. <sup>6</sup>All we like sheep have gone astray; we have turned every one to his own way; and the Lord hath laid on him the iniquity of us all...(see below)

WILLINGLY TOOK THE PUNISHMENT: <sup>7</sup>He was oppressed, and he was afflicted, yet he opened not his mouth: he is brought as a lamb to the slaughter, and as a sheep before her shearers is dumb, so he openeth not his mouth. <sup>8</sup>He was taken from prison and from judgment: and who



shall declare his generation? for he was cut off out of the land of the living: for the transgression of my people was he stricken. <sup>9</sup>And he made his grave with the wicked, and with the rich in his death; because he had done no violence, neither was any deceit in his mouth...(see below)

CRUCIFIXION WAS GOD'S WILL: <sup>10</sup>Yet it pleased the Lord to bruise him; he hath put him to grief: when thou shalt make his soul an offering for sin, he shall see his seed, he shall prolong his days, and the pleasure of the Lord shall prosper in his hand. <sup>11</sup>He shall see of the travail of his soul, and shall be satisfied: by his knowledge shall my righteous servant justify many; for he shall bear their iniquities. <sup>12</sup>Therefore will I divide him a portion with the great, and he shall divide the spoil with the strong; because he hath poured out his soul unto death: and he was numbered with the transgressors; and he bare the sin of many, and made intercession for the transgressors. Isaiah Chapter 53...(see below)

In re v. 2: *And when the sabbath day was come, he began to teach in the synagogue: and many hearing him were astonished, saying, From whence hath this man these things? and what wisdom is this which is given unto him, that even such mighty works are wrought by his hands? Is not this the carpenter, the son of Mary, the brother of James, and Joses, and of Juda, and Simon? and are not his sisters here with us? And they were offended at him. But Jesus, said unto them, A prophet is not without honour, but in his own country, and among his own kin, and in his own house. And he could there do no mighty work, save that he laid his hands upon a few sick folk, and healed them. And he marvelled because of their unbelief. And he went round about the villages, teaching. Mark 6:2-6.*

In re v. 3: *Then came Jesus forth, wearing the crown of thorns, and the purple robe. And Pilate saith unto them, Behold the man! John 19:5.*

In re v. 4-6: *Even as the Son of man came not to be ministered unto, but to minister, and to give his life a ransom for many. Matthew 20:28.*

In re v. 7: *And when he was accused of the chief priests and elders, he answered nothing. Then said Pilate unto him, Hearest thou not how many things they witness against thee? And he answered him to never a word; insomuch that the governor marvelled greatly. Matthew 27:12-14.*

In re v. 9: *Who did no sin, neither was guile found in his mouth: Who, when he was reviled, reviled not again; when he suffered, he threatened not; but committed himself to him that judgeth righteously: 1 Peter 2:22-23.*

In re v. 9: *When the even was come, there came a rich man of Arimathaea, named Joseph, who also himself was Jesus' disciple: He went to Pilate, and begged the body of Jesus. Then Pilate commanded the body to be delivered. And when Joseph had taken the body, he wrapped it in a clean linen cloth, And laid it in his own new tomb, which he had hewn out in the rock: and he rolled a great stone to the door of the sepulchre, and departed. Matthew 27:57-60.*

In re v. 12: *Jesus, when he had cried again with a loud voice, yielded up the ghost. Matthew 27:50.*

In re v. 12: *Then said Jesus, Father, forgive them; for they know not what they do. And they parted his raiment, and cast lots. Luke 23:34.*

JUDGED, WITHSTOOD INDIGNITIES: Now gather thyself in troops, O daughter of troops: he hath laid siege against us: they shall smite the judge of Israel with a rod upon the cheek. Micah 5:1.

*And when they had platted a crown of thorns, they put it upon his head, and a reed in his right hand: and they bowed the knee before him, and mocked him, saying, Hail, King of the Jews! And*

*they spit upon him, and took the reed, and smote him on the head. Matthew 27:29-30.*

WILLING VICTIM TO PAY FOR OUR SINS ON A CROSS: The Lord God hath opened mine ear, and I was not rebellious, neither turned away back. I gave my back to the smiters, and my cheeks to them that plucked off the hair: I hid not my face from shame and spitting. For the Lord God will help me; therefore shall I not be confounded: therefore have I set my face like a flint, and I know that I shall not be ashamed. Isaiah 50:5-7.

*Ye have heard the blasphemy: what think ye? And they all condemned him to be guilty of death. And some began to spit on him, and to cover his face, and to buffet him, and to say unto him, Prophecy: and the servants did strike him with the palms of their hands. Mark 14:64-65.*

PIERCED WITH NAILS ON CRUCIFIX: For dogs have compassed me: the assembly of the wicked have inclosed me: they pierced my hands and my feet. Psalms 22:16.

*But Thomas, one of the twelve, called Didymus, was not with them when Jesus came. The other disciples therefore said unto him, We have seen the Lord. But he said unto them, Except I shall see in his hands the print of the nails, and put my finger into the print of the nails, and thrust my hand into his side, I will not believe. John 20:24-25.*

SCORNE ON THE CROSS: All they that see me laugh me to scorn: they shoot out the lip, they shake the head, saying, He trusted on the Lord that he would deliver him: let him deliver him, seeing he delighted in him. Psalms 22:7-8.

*And they that passed by reviled him, wagging their heads, And saying, Thou that destroyest the temple, and buildest it in three days, save thyself. If thou be the Son of God, come down from the cross. Likewise also the chief priests mocking him, with the scribes and elders, said, He saved others; himself he cannot save. If he be the King of Israel, let him now come down from the cross, and we will believe him. He trusted in God: let him deliver him now, if he will have him: for he said, I am the Son of God. The thieves also, which were crucified with him, cast the same in his teeth. Matthew 27:39-44.*

TREATED INDIGNANTLY ON THE CROSS: Reproach hath broken my heart; and I am full of heaviness: and I looked for some to take pity, but there was none; and for comforters, but I found none. They gave me also gall for my meat; and in my thirst they gave me vinegar to drink. Psalms 69:20-21.

*They gave him vinegar to drink mingled with gall: and when he had tasted thereof, he would not drink. And they crucified him, and parted his garments, casting lots: that it might be fulfilled which was spoken by the prophet, They parted my garments among them, and upon my vesture did they cast lots. Matthew 27:34-35.*

NOT A BONE SHALL BE BROKEN: In one house shall it be eaten; thou shalt not carry forth ought of the flesh abroad out of the house; neither shall ye break a bone thereof. Exodus 12:46.  
*Then came the soldiers, and brake the legs of the first, and of the other which was crucified with him. But when they came to Jesus, and saw that he was dead already, they brake not his legs: For these things were done, that the scripture should be fulfilled, A bone of him shall not be broken. John 19: 32-33, 36.*

ON THE CROSS HIS SIDE SHALL BE PIERCED: And I will pour upon the house of David, and upon the inhabitants of Jerusalem, the spirit of grace and of supplications: and they shall look upon me whom they have pierced, and they shall mourn for him, as one mourneth for his

only son, and shall be in bitterness for him, as one that is in bitterness for his firstborn. Zechariah 12:10.

*But one of the soldiers with a spear pierced his side, and forthwith came there out blood and water. And again another scripture saith, They shall look on him whom they pierced. John 19:34,37.*

MESSIAH SHALL RISE TO RULE WITH GOD: Therefore my heart is glad, and my glory rejoiceth: my flesh also shall rest in hope. For thou wilt not leave my soul in hell; neither wilt thou suffer thine Holy One to see corruption. Psalms 16:9-10.

*Men and brethren, let me freely speak unto you of the patriarch David, that he is both dead and buried, and his sepulchre is with us unto this day. Therefore being a prophet, and knowing that God had sworn with an oath to him, that of the fruit of his loins, according to the flesh, he would raise up Christ to sit on his throne; He seeing this before spake of the resurrection of Christ, that his soul was not left in hell, neither his flesh did see corruption. Acts 2:29-31.*

MESSIAH TO RULE AT RIGHT HAND OF GOD: The Lord said unto my Lord, Sit thou at my right hand, until I make thine enemies thy footstool. Psalms 110:1.

*God, who at sundry times and in divers manners spake in time past unto the fathers by the prophets, Hath in these last days spoken unto us by his Son, whom he hath appointed heir of all things, by whom also he made the worlds; Who being the brightness of his glory, and the express image of his person, and upholding all things by the word of his power, when he had by himself purged our sins, sat down on the right hand of the Majesty on high; Hebrews 1:1-3.*

MESSIAH WAS RESURRECTED TO CONQUER DEATH: Even he shall build the temple of the Lord; and he shall bear the glory, and shall sit and rule upon his throne; and he shall be a priest upon his throne: and the counsel of peace shall be between them both. Zechariah 6:13.

*Who is he that condemneth? It is Christ that died, yea rather, that is risen again, who is even at the right hand of God, who also maketh intercession for us. Romans 8:34.*

MESSIAH THE CORNER STONE OF FAITH: Because ye have said, We have made a covenant with death, and with hell are we at agreement; when the overflowing scourge shall pass through, it shall not come unto us: for we have made lies our refuge, and under falsehood have we hid ourselves: Therefore thus saith the Lord God, Behold, I lay in Zion for a foundation a stone, a tried stone, a precious corner stone, a sure foundation: he that believeth shall not make haste. Isaiah 28:15-16.

*Ye also, as lively stones, are built up a spiritual house, an holy priesthood, to offer up spiritual sacrifices, acceptable to God by Jesus Christ. Wherefore also it is contained in the scripture, Behold, I lay in Sion a chief corner stone, elect, precious: and he that believeth on him shall not be confounded. Unto you therefore which believe he is precious: but unto them which be disobedient, the stone which the builders disallowed, the same is made the head of the corner, And a stone of stumbling, and a rock of offence, even to them which stumble at the word, being disobedient: whereunto also they were appointed. 1 Peter 2:5-8.*

GOD DECLARES MESSIAH AS SON OF GOD: Yet have I set my king upon my holy hill of Zion. I will declare the decree: the Lord hath said unto me, Thou art my son; this day have I begotten thee. Psalms 2:6-7.

*And, behold, thou shalt conceive in thy womb, and bring forth a son, and shalt call his name Jesus. He shall be great, and shall be called the Son of the Highest: and the Lord God shall give*

*unto him the throne of his father David: And he shall reign over the house of Jacob for ever; and of his kingdom there shall be no end. Luke 1:31-33.*

MESSIAH TO WITNESS TO GENTILES: They shall not hurt nor destroy in all my holy mountain: for the earth shall be full of the knowledge of the Lord, as the waters cover the sea. And in that day there shall be a root of Jesse, which shall stand for an ensign of the people; to it shall the Gentiles seek: and his rest shall be glorious. Isaiah 11:9-10.

*As the Father knoweth me, even so I know the Father: and I lay down my life for the sheep. And other sheep I have, which are not of this fold: them also I must bring, and they shall hear my voice; and there shall be one fold, and one shepherd. John 10:15-16.*

RIGHTEOUS JUDGE: Thy throne, O God, is for ever and ever: the sceptre of thy kingdom is a right sceptre. Thou lovest righteousness, and hatest wickedness: therefore God, thy God, hath anointed thee with the oil of gladness above thy fellows. Psalms 45:6-7.

*I can of mine own self do nothing: as I hear, I judge: and my judgment is just; because I seek not mine own will, but the will of the Father which hath sent me. John 5:30.*

*And I saw heaven opened, and behold a white horse; and he that sat upon him was called Faithful and True, and in righteousness he doth judge and make war. Revelation 19:11.*

TO LIVE AND REIGN FOREVER: I saw in the night visions, and, behold, one like the Son of man came with the clouds of heaven, and came to the Ancient of days, and they brought him near before him. And there was given him dominion, and glory, and a kingdom, that all people, nations, and languages, should serve him: his dominion is an everlasting dominion, which shall not pass away, and his kingdom that which shall not be destroyed. Daniel 7:13-14.

*Wherefore God also hath highly exalted him, and given him a name which is above every name: That at the name of Jesus every knee should bow, of things in heaven, and things in earth, and things under the earth; And that every tongue should confess that Jesus Christ is Lord, to the glory of God the Father. Philippians 2:9-11.*

*He shall be great, and shall be called the Son of the Highest: and the Lord God shall give unto him the throne of his father David: And he shall reign over the house of Jacob for ever; and of his kingdom there shall be no end. Luke 1:32-33.*

## LINEAGE OF THE MESSIAH

This is the lineage listing Christ's descent, perhaps "royal pedigree," from Noah, Abraham, Isaac, David, Levi, and others. This also fulfills Messianic prophecy.

<sup>23</sup>And Jesus himself began to be about thirty years of age, being (as was supposed) the son of Joseph, which was the son of Heli, <sup>24</sup>W/w the son of Matthat, w/w the son of Levi, w/w the son of Melchi, w/w the son of Janna, w/w the son of Joseph, <sup>25</sup>W/w the son of Mattathias, w/w the son of Amos, w/w the son of Naum, w/w the son of Esli, w/w the son of Nagge, <sup>26</sup>W/w the son of Maath, w/w the son of Mattathias, w/w the son of Semei, w/w the son of Joseph, w/w the son of Juda, <sup>27</sup>W/w the son of Joanna, w/w the son of Rhesa, w/w the son of Zorobabel, w/w the son of Salathiel, w/w the son of Neri, <sup>28</sup>W/w the son of Melchi, w/w the son of Addi, w/w the son of Cosam, w/w the son of Elmodam, w/w the son of Er, <sup>29</sup>W/w the son of Jose, w/w the son of Eliezer, w/w the son of Jorim, w/w the son of

Matthat, w/w the son of Levi, <sup>30</sup>W/w the son of Simeon, w/w the son of Juda, w/w the son of Joseph, w/w the son of Jonan, w/w the son of Eliakim, <sup>31</sup>W/w the son of Melea, w/w the son of Menan, w/w the son of Mattatha, w/w the son of Nathan, w/w the son of David, <sup>32</sup>W/w the son of Jesse, w/w the son of Obed, w/w the son of Booz, w/w the son of Salmon, w/w the son of Naasson, <sup>33</sup>W/w the son of Aminadab, w/w the son of Aram, w/w the son of Esrom, w/w the son of Phares, w/w the son of Juda, <sup>34</sup>W/w the son of Jacob, w/w the son of Isaac, w/w the son of Abraham, w/w the son of Thara, w/w the son of Nachor, <sup>35</sup>W/w the son of Saruch, w/w the son of Ragau, w/w the son of Phalec, w/w the son of Heber, w/w the son of Sala, <sup>36</sup>W/w the son of Cainan, w/w the son of Arphaxad, w/w the son of (Shem), w/w the son of (Noah). (Luke 3:23-36a)

These Old Testament prophecies and New Testament fulfillments are either chilling or heartwarming, depending on your view of Jesus or ideas about a Messiah or the Messiah. I am not acquainted with Messianic claims of others, but I have wagered my eternity on this one. He fits.

Have you honestly given much thought to what is beyond this world? We will rejoin that theme after the next section, which looks at our daily lives.

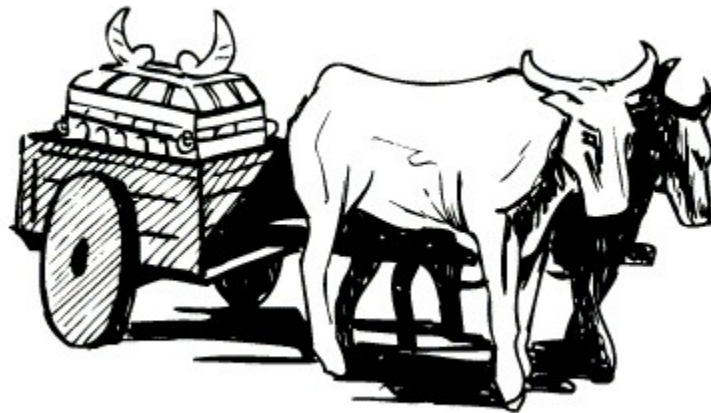


### **PART III THE EFFECT OF A CREATOR GOD ON OUR DAILY LIVES**



**Now these Jews were more noble than those in Thessalonica, for they received the word with all eagerness, examining the scriptures daily to see if these things were so. Acts 17:11 RSV**

## Chapter 6. God's View: Does it Matter What We Believe?



"Are we to believe that God created other people in order to condemn them?" Catholic Sister Joan Chittister<sup>30</sup>

*Know therefore that the Lord thy God, He is God, the faithful God, which keepeth covenant and mercy with them that love Him and keep His commandments to a thousand generations;* (Deuteronomy 7:9)

When I was a young boy I remember thinking, "God wouldn't send the 'heathen' Africans to hell when they die. They don't know about God's promise and plan of salvation." My unfortunate view of other cultures was not taught to me in Sunday school, nor was it a racial view, but literally because of what I saw on TV in the 1950's, including on Tarzan movies.

Sister Joan Chittister, quoted above, is a brilliant woman. We have in common that we are Penn State University alumni, she a distinguished alumnus. We both are concerned with the spiritual, and the spiritual fate of others. I will stop there because Sister Joan's honors go on-and-on. I stop at Brother. (I have a sister Jane and brother Fred. I am their brother.)

At one time I agreed with Sister Joan on the issue of the heathen that knew nothing of the true God. I certainly do believe in an eternal Heaven and an eternal, literal hell. I do not wish anyone to be anywhere but in Heaven for the hereafter. But now my thoughts on one's eternal fate have changed; I believe it *is* fair for the heathen to be damned, just as it is fair for any non-believer to be damned. In fact it is fair for the believer to be damned, but for the grace of God. Let me tell you why I say a poor heathen, who never heard of God and Salvation, and who has suffered through disease and poverty, would deserve such eternal punishment. I say the answer is in the first book of the Bible. I further say there is no good reason why there are people blind to God.

He hath remembered His covenant forever, the word which He commanded to a thousand generations. (Psalms 105:8)

God created everything, including the first man and woman. The first man and woman

---

<sup>30</sup> Glembocki, Vicki, "Vow of No Silence, *Penn Stater*, Penn State Alumni Association, University Park, Pa., January/February 2001, p. 35.

gave rise to *all* civilization. At one time *all* of civilization was very aware of the Creator God. Because of sin and failure to obey God, the people of the world became very corrupt. Noah found grace in the eyes of God. God destroyed all of the living creatures except those taken aboard the ark. All of Noah's family knew God. All of today's heathens are descendents of Noah's family. Therefore, all heathens are descendents of Noah, who knew God, and chose to reject God and worship whatever else they wanted to worship.

Using the Word of God as the measuring stick (as it is God who established the rules in the first place) anyone lost has no excuse.

<sup>89</sup>For ever, O Lord, thy word is settled in heaven. <sup>90</sup>Thy faithfulness is unto all generations: thou hast established the earth, and it abideth. <sup>160</sup>Thy word is true from the beginning: and every one of thy righteous judgments endureth for ever. (Psalms 119:89,90,160)

#### WHAT ARE THE MAJOR RELIGIONS?

Judaism	18,153,000	
Roman Catholic	1,042,501,000	
Protestant	382,374,000	
Orthodox	173,560,000	
Anglican	75,847,000	
<b>TOTAL JUDEO-CHRISTIAN</b>	<b>1,692,435,000</b>	<b>30%</b>
<b>TOTAL ISLAM AND BAHAI</b>	<b>1,020,114,000</b>	<b>18%</b>
Hindu	751,360,000	
Buddhist	334,002,000	
Traditional Chinese	140,956,000	
Sikhism	19,853,000	
Shamanism	10,854,000	
Confucianism	6,230,000	
Jainism	3,927,000	
Shinto's	3,336,000	
<b>TOTAL EASTERN</b>	<b>1,270,508,000</b>	<b>23%</b>
Other "Christianity"	195,470,000	
Tribal Religions	99,736,000	
Other and new religions	142,948,000	
<b>TOTAL OTHER</b>	<b>438,154,000</b>	<b>8%</b>
Non-religious	912,874,000	
Atheist	241,852,000	
<b>TOTAL NON/NO GOD</b>	<b>1,154,726,000</b>	<b>21%</b>
<b>GRAND TOTAL</b>	<b>5,575,947,000</b>	<b>100%</b>

Rhetorical question: how did 21% of us worldwide lose faith that there is a God, when



100% of the first people on earth, Adam and Eve, knew there was a living God? And then 100% again knew firsthand that there was (is) a living God when Noah's family disembarked from the ark? Thirty percent (30%) of us "kept the faith," that is, are Jewish or mainstream Christian. So added together with the non-religious and atheists that leaves 49%. Even in Moses' day some only kept the faith long enough until someone else built a golden calf. So, what did the other 49% of the world come up with (of the 70% that Sister Joan thinks that God should not condemn)?

All of the following descriptions of world religions are excerpted and condensed from *Compton's Interactive Encyclopedia*.<sup>31</sup> These will give a notion of what has transpired from within our human minds aside from concepts such as golden calves:

Mormons. Mormon teaching states that God had originally evolved from mankind. Therefore present humanity could become gods. Contrary to Christianity, Mormon belief asserts that the three persons of the Godhead are three separate beings. Jesus Christ appeared on Earth to save mankind, but each person's salvation depends on the quality of his own life. A baptism by immersion is practiced, and there is also a baptism on behalf of the dead. Mormons believe it is possible for dead ancestors to participate in salvation.

Jehovah's Witnesses hold beliefs that differ markedly from those in traditional Christian denominations. They believe in a God, Jehovah, who sent Jesus Christ to Earth to make it possible for mankind to obtain eternal life. The divinity of Jesus is denied, as is the existence of the Holy Spirit as a separate person of the Trinity. By the late 1980s the Witnesses had more than 3,700,000 members worldwide and were doing work in more than 200 countries and territories.

Seventh-Day Adventists. The Old and New Testaments of the Bible both foretell the advent (coming) of a Savior, or Messiah. When He appears, as an agent of God, the wicked will be punished and a new Heaven and Earth created. This expectation is called Adventism. In a sense, all Jews and Christians are Adventists. But they disagree on whether Jesus Christ was the Messiah that was promised in the Hebrew Bible (Old Testament). Seventh-Day Adventists believe in the second coming of Christ, baptism by immersion, and observing the seventh day (Saturday) as Sabbath. Originated about 1844; expenses of ministry are met by a tithing system. They have extensive foreign missions.

Christian Science accepts many of the basic doctrines of Christianity, including belief in one God, the authority of the Bible, and the life and ministry of Jesus Christ. It departs from traditional Christianity in regarding Jesus primarily as an example of the divine son ship of God that is present in all humanity. It also denies that God creates the world of matter. Matter is viewed instead as a perception. Reality--life, will, and mind--is spiritual. Hence the illnesses and misfortunes of the flesh are problems that are related only to the material aspect of life. Christian redemption is a rebirth out of the physical into the spiritual, from the material into the real. This is a lifelong process: Christian Science has a full-time healing ministry engaged in by people called practitioners. The curing of disease through prayer is regarded as a necessary element in salvation. Followers are not compelled by the church to use spiritual healing.

---

<sup>31</sup> Excerpted and condensed from *Compton's Interactive Encyclopedia*. Copyright © 1994, 1995, 1996, 1997 The Learning Company, Inc. All Rights Reserved.

Islam. In the year 610, the first of many revelations came to Muhammad from God by way of the angel Gabriel. The message Muhammad received told him that there was but one God, not many gods, as most Arabs believed. This God was creator of the world, and He would one-day judge mankind. Judaism and Christianity were already spreading the idea of one God. Muhammad saw his task, therefore, not as something new, but as a continuation and conclusion. He was the last in a succession of prophets stretching from Adam, Abraham, Moses, and Elijah, to Jesus who proclaimed the oneness of God, or Allah. But Islam was never incorporated into either Judaism or Christianity. It became a new religion and a new civilization as well. The revelations that Muhammad received were collected into the Koran. Islam teaches that there is one God, the creator and sustainer of the universe. This God, Allah, is compassionate and just. Because He is compassionate, He calls all people to believe in Him and worship Him. Because He is also just, on the Last Day He will judge every person according to his deeds. On the Last Day, all the dead will be resurrected and either rewarded with Heaven or punished with hell. God has sent prophets to communicate His will. These prophets, all mortal men, were elected messengers to whom God spoke through an angel or by inspiration. The life of each Muslim is always within the community of the faithful: All are declared to be "brothers to each other," with the mission to "enjoin good and forbid evil." Within the community, Muslims are expected to establish social and economic justice. They are also expected to carry their message out to the rest of the world. In the early Islamic community, this meant the use of force in the form of jihad, or holy war to gain political control over societies and run them in accordance with the principles of Islam. During the decades following the death of Muhammad certain essential principles were singled out from his teachings. These have come to be called the five pillars of Islam: the basic creed, prayer, pilgrimage, fasting, and the charitable contribution.

Hinduism is the major religion of the Indian subcontinent. It dates back more than 3,000 years. More than 90 percent of the world's Hindus live in India. Significant (populations) may be found in Pakistan and Sri Lanka, and smaller numbers live in Myanmar, South Africa, Trinidad, Europe, and the United States. Hinduism is unlike any other religion. It is difficult to define with any precision. Its origins are lost in a very distant past. It does not have one holy book but several. There is no single body of doctrine. Instead there is a great diversity of belief and practice. There are many sects, cults, theologies, and schools of philosophy, and all of them find a home within Hinduism. It is a religion that worships many gods. Yet it also adheres to the view that there is only one God, called Brahman. All other divinities are aspects of the one absolute and unknowable Brahman. Another feature of Hinduism is belief in reincarnation. Associated with this belief is the conviction that all living things are part of the same essence. Individuals pass through cycles of birth and death. This means that an individual soul may return many times in human, animal, or even vegetable form. What a person does in the present life will affect the next life.

Buddhism The religion of about one eighth of the world's people, Buddhism is the name for a system of beliefs developed around the teachings of a single man. The Buddha, whose name was Siddhartha Gautama, lived 2,500 years ago in India. There is no one single "bible" of Buddhism, but all Buddhists share some basic beliefs. Buddha means "the Awakened or Enlightened One," and all Buddhist teachings try to share the Buddha's experience of awakening to truth. Having led an indulgent life as a young man, Siddhartha Gautama decided to pursue a course of bitter self-denial. Yet he felt that this brought him no closer to the truth he sought than the rich life he had led. One day he felt close to reaching his truth, and he sat down under a tree now known as the Bo tree. There he attained the bliss and knowledge he had been seeking. The Buddha wanted

to make his inspiration about the nature of life available to others for their betterment. He worked his experience into a doctrine known as the Four Noble Truths, the basis of all schools of Buddhism. The Buddha taught for almost 50 years after his Enlightenment. He did not write a word of his teachings. No one during his lifetime put anything he said in writing. His original teachings were handed down from one generation to the next by word of mouth.

Sikhism The Punjab region of northern India is home to Sikhism. The word Sikh means "disciple." Adherents consider themselves disciples of the founder, Guru Nanak, and his nine successors (guru means "teacher"). Roots of the movement he founded were in the Hindu cult of devotion to Vishnu and in the practices of the Muslim mystics called Sufis. Nanak taught that there is one God who is creator of the world. This God is completely unknowable except to those who can perceive Him in His creation. Such perception can only come to those who reject loyalty to the world and its values. Nanak laid out a path to salvation that was a simple devotional discipline of meditation. The goal was release from the cycle of birth and death. This cycle refers to Nanak's doctrine of reincarnation: the soul is born many times into the world before it is finally released to find unity with God.

Shamanism, religion of the Ural-Altaic peoples living from Bering Strait to borders of Scandinavia; found in varied forms among Eskimos and American Indians; based on belief that good and evil come from ancestral spirits, gods, and demons that can be influenced by the priest or medicine man (shaman).

Confucianism For more than 2,000 years the Chinese people have been guided by the ideals of Confucianism. Its founder and greatest teacher was Confucius, whose humane philosophy also influenced the civilization of all of eastern Asia. With teaching and with wise sayings, Confucius tried to bring people to a virtuous way of life and a respect for the teachings of the wise men of older generations. He always said of himself that he was a "transmitter, not a maker." He collected and edited the poetry, the music, and the historical writings of what he considered the golden age. Confucius laid no claim to being more than a man. Yet when he died he was revered almost as a god. Temples were erected in his honor in every city of China. His grave at Kufow became a place of pilgrimage.

Jainism is one of the major religions that developed within the ancient civilization of India. The name of the religion derives from the term Jina, meaning "victor" or "conqueror." The goal of Jainism is the spiritual progress of the individual through a succession of stages until he is able to conquer and renounce dependence on the world and the self. Thereby the individual is freed from all contamination by the material world. Followers of Jainism believe that the world, space, and time are eternal and uncreated. There is a center containing a region of souls in which all living things--people, animals, gods, and devils--exist. Below this region is a series of hells--places of punishment and torture, and above the region are levels of heavens and celestial areas in which souls live once they are liberated from bodies. All reality in the universe is divided into two parts: living substances called souls and nonliving substances. The soul possesses unlimited perception, knowledge, happiness, and power. But once a soul is entrapped in matter--such as the human body--these faculties are limited by location in space, contaminated by the senses, and subject to the chain of cause and effect, birth and death. The means of liberation for the soul is yoga, a discipline of self-control and meditation. The chief concept that guides behavior in Jainism is ahimsa, the principle of nonviolence and noninjury toward all living things. This has led to a belief in the equality of all souls and to the freedom to associate with anyone.

Shintoism Shinto seems to be as old as the Japanese people and nation. Shinto is a loose system of beliefs and attitudes held by most Japanese about themselves, their families and clans, and their ruling powers. The word itself means "the way of *kami*," and while there is no precise English equivalent, *kami* refer to superior powers, either natural or divine, which are revered by followers of Shinto. The *kami* can be neither known nor explained, but they are believed to be the source of human life and existence. The *kami* reveal truth to people and give them guidance to live in accordance with it. Shinto does not have regular weekly services. Devotees may visit the shrines any time they want to. There are several festivals during the year that bring believers together for varying purposes. Some festivals celebrate the events of an individual's life from birth to old age. Shinto has no known founder, nor are there *sacred* books. Its two chief books are 'Records of Ancient Matters' and 'Chronicles of Japan', written in 712 and 720 respectively. They are compilations of the ancient oral tradition of Shinto, but they deal as well with other historical topics. The core of the mythology centers on the Sun goddess, Amaterasu O-mikami, whose descendants unified Japan under the authority of the first emperor, Jimmu Tenno.

## NON-LITERAL GENESIS POSITION

If one believes we evolved, if one believes there was not a literal flood or at least not a worldwide flood, then one might say the heathens never had a chance of knowing God. I believe these are nonsensical "if's" because I believe the evidence supports a literal Genesis, literal 6-day Biblical creation, literal flood, literal Messiah, literal crucifixion, literal resurrection, literal plan of salvation, literal Heaven, hell, and eternity. To say that these beliefs are very important is an understatement. It is possible that a misunderstanding of the first book of the Bible could lead to an incorrect decision affecting one's eternal fate. Please, make the right choice for your eternity.

## PROVE THE EXISTENCE OF GOD, AND I WILL BELIEVE

A man I have known for about 25 years has a biology background. He has been asking me many questions about my writings. His interest has been encouraging. Yesterday the truth was revealed.

For the first time, He came right out and told me that evolution is scientific "fact"; it is not a theory (as even the scientists admit). He said that the world is old (billions of years); but, if I can show him one fossil found out of place, he will believe in creation. These words would sound familiar to Ken Ham.

I truly think he is looking for God, but he admits his present doubts that there is a God. I will show him the written fossil evidence he wants. I have previously given him information showing the weakness of evolutionary theory. The sad part is, he will neither believe in God nor the evidence. He will see, yet not see. He has already heard, but not heard. Even if he does believe the evidence, he will say it is because pressure from the ice age turned the rock layers upside down, or something to that effect, and at any rate will not believe in God. You cannot prove the existence of God to someone who does not believe in God "even if they drag (the ark) down Main Street."

## “CHRISTIAN LAW:”

### WHAT ARE WE TO BELIEVE AND DO?

Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thine heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy might. (Deuteronomy 6:5).

Christians are to follow the Ten Commandments, as are the Jews. God did not saddle the Gentiles with some of the law, such as the dietary laws, that were established just for His people. But many instructions of obedience were given to the early Christians that we are still to observe. The following are some of these instructions given to the Christians (this is both to the gentile converts and to the Jews that followed Christ as well):

<sup>1</sup>Children, obey your parents in the Lord: for this is right.

<sup>2</sup>Honour thy father and mother;

<sup>4</sup>And, ye fathers, provoke not your children to wrath: but bring them up in the nurture and admonition of the Lord.

<sup>5</sup>Servants, be obedient to...your masters according to the flesh, with fear and trembling, in singleness of your heart, as unto Christ;...<sup>7</sup>With good will doing service, as to the Lord, and not to men:

<sup>9</sup>And, ye masters, do the same things unto them, forbearing threatening: knowing that your Master also is in heaven; neither is there respect of persons with him.

<sup>10</sup>Finally, my brethren, be strong in the Lord, and in the power of his might. <sup>11</sup>Put on the whole armour of God, that ye may be able to stand against the wiles of the devil. (Ephesians 6:1-11)

Study to shew thyself approved unto God, a workman that needeth not to be ashamed, rightly dividing the word of truth. (2 Timothy 2:15).

And whatsoever ye do, do it heartily, as to the Lord, and not unto men; knowing that of the Lord ye shall receive the reward of the inheritance: for ye serve the Lord Christ. But he that doeth wrong shall receive for the wrong which he hath done: and there is no respect of persons. (Colossians 3:23-25).

Believe on the Lord Jesus Christ, and thou shalt be saved, and thy house. (Acts 16:31).

Follow peace with all men, and holiness, without which no man shall see the Lord: Looking diligently lest any man fail of the grace of God; lest any root of bitterness springing up trouble you, and thereby many be defiled; (Hebrews 12:14-15).

Whosoever shall confess that Jesus is the Son of God, God dwelleth in him, and he in God. And we have known and believed the love that God hath to us. God is love; and he that dwelleth in love dwelleth in God, and God in him. (1 John 4:15-16).

For whosoever shall keep the whole law, and yet offend in one point, he is guilty

of all. For he that said, Do not commit adultery, said also, Do not kill. Now if thou commit no adultery, yet if thou kill, thou art become a transgressor of the law. (James 2:10-11).

Instructions as spoken by Jesus Christ, the accepted Messiah of Christians:

Man shall not live by bread alone, but by every word that proceedeth out of the mouth of God. (Matthew 4:4).

Love ye your enemies, and do good, and lend, hoping for nothing again; and your reward shall be great, and ye shall be the children of the Highest: for he is kind unto the unthankful and to the evil. Be ye therefore merciful, as your Father also is merciful. Judge not, and ye shall not be judged: condemn not, and ye shall not be condemned: forgive, and ye shall be forgiven: Give, and it shall be given unto you; good measure, pressed down, and shaken together, and running over, shall men give into your bosom. For with the same measure that ye mete withal it shall be measured to you again. (Luke 6:35-38).

Also I say unto you, Whosoever shall confess me before men, him shall the Son of man also confess before the angels of God: But he that denieth me before men shall be denied before the angels of God. And whosoever shall speak a word against the Son of man, it shall be forgiven him: but unto him that blasphemeth against the Holy Ghost it shall not be forgiven. (Luke 12:8-10).

And seek not ye what ye shall eat, or what ye shall drink, neither be ye of doubtful mind. For all these things do the nations of the world seek after: and your Father knoweth that ye have need of these things. But rather seek ye the kingdom of God; and all these things shall be added unto you. (Luke 12:29-31).

He that believeth on the Son hath everlasting life: and he that believeth not the Son shall not see life; but the wrath of God abideth on him. (John 3:36).

Then said Jesus to those Jews which believed on him, If ye continue in my word, then are ye my disciples indeed; And ye shall know the truth, and the truth shall make you free. (John 8:31-32).

But thou, when thou prayest, enter into thy closet, and when thou hast shut thy door, pray to thy Father which is in secret; and thy Father which seeth in secret shall reward thee openly. But when ye pray, use not vain repetitions, as the heathen do: for they think that they shall be heard for their much speaking. (Matthew 6:6-7).

He that loveth father or mother more than me is not worthy of me: and he that loveth son or daughter more than me is not worthy of me. And he that taketh not his cross, and followeth after me, is not worthy of me. He that findeth his life shall lose it: and he that loseth his life for my sake shall find it. He that receiveth you receiveth me, and he that receiveth me receiveth him that sent me. (Matthew

10:37-40).

And Jesus answering said unto him, It is said, Thou shalt not tempt the Lord thy God. (Luke 4:12).

Labour not for the meat which perisheth, but for that meat which endureth unto everlasting life, which the Son of man shall give unto you: for him hath God the Father sealed. (John 6:27).

## SEEK ONLY THE BIBLE FOR DOCTRINE

It is dangerous and anti-God to extract as doctrine any beliefs from sources other than the Bible. Remember the young Southern Baptist man mentioned in Chapter 3. He walked away from God because he became convinced evolution is true. He took the word of man over the Word of God.

Of course only we can think this way. If a Jew or Christian accepts the Bible as the Word of God, then the conflict between man's words and God's Words exists. A person that does not believe in God likewise does not believe the Bible, and that brings us back to the impossibility of proving the existence of God to a non-believer.

## WHY BELIEVE IN THE MESSIAH? (WHAT IS IN IT FOR ME?)

A Christian believes in the Messiah, and that the Messiah is not only from God but is God, because the Messiah promises the salvation we read about in the Old Testament. The peculiar thing is, many Christians do not know what that really means. They believe that the Messiah is to provide salvation, but then they think the rest is up to their own doings.

None of us are worthy to perform any acts that would redeem ourselves from sin. If we could do it ourselves, we would not need a Messiah. When we hire an attorney, he intercedes on our behalf. With his qualifications and abilities, the lawyer gets us off the hook (we hope). It is the same with the Messiah. Only He is qualified and can intercede for us.

## DO YOU JUST HAVE TO DO THE BEST YOU CAN?

Doing the best you can is wonderful. Is that what we teach our children? Is that not also what God would have His children do? What more can you expect? One last question; have you read the following scripture: *Man, being born not into perfection, but doing good works unto the best he can, convinceth the Father of his eternal inheritance in Heaven?* Nah, I never saw that verse anywhere either.

God sets the standards. Moses did not write the Ten Commandments, go to the mountain, and "run them by the Big Guy" like we might do on earth with our bosses. No, God wrote the Ten Commandments with His own finger. God gave all of the preceding scripture, by which we know His rules, His will, and our standards. There is only one way; God's Way.

## GOD'S WAY

I think the King James Bible has beautiful language. If I were to compose a narrative that would outline God's plan of how to get us to spend eternity with Him, by virtue of the intercession of the Messiah, I would write something like this:

MESSIAH: Let not your heart be troubled: ye believe in God, believe also in me. In my heavenly Father's house are many mansions: if it were not so, I would have told you. I go to prepare a place for you. And if I go and prepare a place for you, I will come again, and receive you unto myself; that where I am, there ye may be also. And whither I go ye know, and the way ye know.

ME: I asked this question unto him, Lord, we know not whither thou goest; and how can we know the way?

MESSIAH: Verily I say unto you, I am the way, the truth, and the life: no man cometh unto the Father, but by me.

That would be a great conversation! Do you ever pre-plan possible scenarios that might develop during an important conversation, rehearsing them so as to avoid pitfalls when the big moment comes? I do, and the system works. I think it was a suggestion from an Earl Nightingale tape. At any rate, I told you a little fib- the preceding words were recorded in the New Testament book of John, chapter 14, verses 1-6, as Jesus Christ spoke to His disciples.

Those six verses are God's way to redemption and eternal life. Here is a New Testament description of heaven:

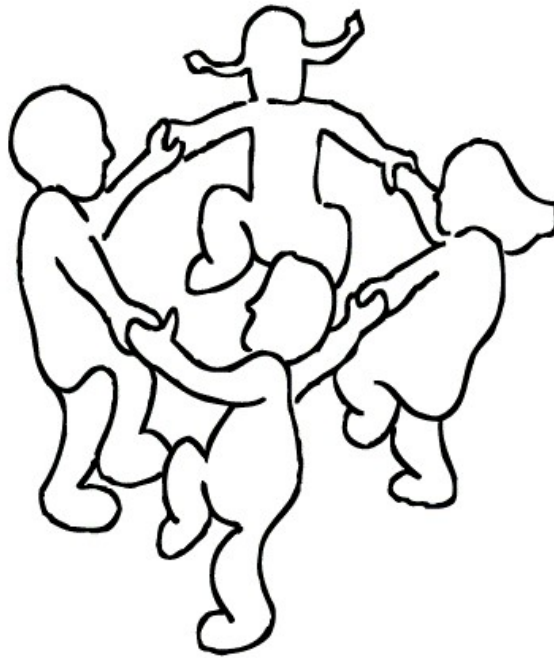
And I saw a new heaven and a new earth: for the first heaven and the first earth were passed away; and there was no more sea. And I John saw the holy city, new Jerusalem, coming down from God out of heaven, prepared as a bride adorned for her husband. And I heard a great voice out of heaven saying, Behold, *the tabernacle of God is with men, and he will dwell with them, and they shall be his people, and God himself shall be with them, and be their God. And God shall wipe away all tears from their eyes; and there shall be no more death, neither sorrow, nor crying, neither shall there be any more pain: for the former things are passed away.* And he that sat upon the throne said, Behold, I make all things new. (Revelation 21:1-5a).

Most of my life I spent times wishing that I were one of God's chosen people. Not only am I a Gentile, I am a bit of a mutt. I cannot be a Jew but I can do as well and at least be part of God's plan. I have already made my choice in that regard, and I do not want to miss the promise of heaven.





## Chapter 7. Abortion: Which Children Should Live?



Will the Lord be pleased with thousands of rams, or with ten thousands of rivers of oil? Shall I give my firstborn for my transgression, the fruit of my body for the sin of my soul? (Micah 6:7)

My address to a jury at the start of a hearing on abortion would be: “If abortion were used to solve unwanted pregnancies throughout history, there would be a profound difference in what the world would be today compared to what it really is. I intend to present evidence that abortion is morally wrong in man’s terms, in God’s terms, is murder, and is a sin against God. I would not be before this jury today if unwanted pregnancies were resolved 100 years ago with murderous dispatch, and neither would my family. I challenge you to look back into your own family and see if the same is true. Would you be here? If there is no God, then we are murderers playing God. If there is a God, and the wages of sin is death, if we allow abortion we deserve to be damned.”

### WHAT EXACTLY IS ABORTION, AND WHY THE CONFLICT?

“Abortion (is the) termination of pregnancy before birth, resulting in, or accompanied by, the death of the fetus. Spontaneous abortion is commonly known as a miscarriage. Other abortions are induced; that is, intentionally brought on, because a pregnancy is unwanted or presents a risk to a woman’s health. Abortion has become one of the most widely debated ethical issues of our time. On one side are pro-choice supporters, individuals who favor a woman’s reproductive rights, including the right to choose to have an abortion. On the other side are the pro-life advocates,

who oppose abortion except in extreme circumstances, as when the mother's life would be threatened by carrying a pregnancy to term. At one end of this ethical spectrum are pro-choice defenders who believe the fetus is only a potential human being until it is viable. Until this time the fetus has no legal rights—the rights belong to the woman carrying the fetus, who can decide whether or not to bring the pregnancy to full term. At the other end of the spectrum are pro-life supporters who believe the fetus is a human being from the time of conception.”<sup>32</sup> (Emphasis added.)

I have seen photographs of aborted babies. They have little hands and little feet. They once were living. As far as *viable*, what is viable? You could stick me out in the woods with nothing and I would survive for a while. Perhaps I would live a long time all by myself in society. How about a 6-month old baby? How would it do on its own? 12 months? The baby would die. So, you can kill a one-year old baby because it is not viable, right? We live in a day when rationalization for purposes of our own ends is our god.

## THE WORLD VIEW

Man's view, or the world-view, secular view (or lustful view in some opinions) is that we can toss these unborn babies away at our convenience. A pro-life supporter would jump in right here and talk about rape and incest. This would be very interesting; designation of sin by convenience. Morally, rape and incest are evil measures. Murder is an evil measure. Murder of a baby because of rape and incest is a virtuous measure? That is the old “two wrongs don't make a right.”

The following quote is from Dr. Irvin M. Cushner, as testimony to the U.S. Senate Committee on the Judiciary, 97<sup>th</sup> Congress, First Session, 1983, p. 158, “Over 99% of all U.S. abortions have nothing to do with the life or health of the woman. They are done simply because of her desire for convenience, absence of distress, and her so-called happiness.”

Those that favor abortion speak of instances when the mother's life is in danger. They say they have their “just cause,” and then they contradict themselves and include abortion as a means to end unwanted pregnancies. We have taught our young people that they can go out and be immoral, and if they make a mistake, they can “have it taken care of.”

The abortion clinics all have counselors to speak to the expectant mothers. By now, such counseling is probably expert. We could extend counseling service to anyone considering armed robbery, murder, and especially those considering a career as a serial killer. This idea, by the same logic, could allow us to more readily accept murder. Perhaps this would convince enough people to do away with the death penalty, thereby saving more innocent lives. Pardon my sarcasm.

It is too bad we cannot turn back the clock. The landmark court decision that is as responsible as any if not most responsible for allowing abortion and pro-choice was the 1973 Supreme Court case *Roe v. Wade*. The woman known as Jane Roe in that trial, Norma McCorvey, has changed her mind on abortion. According to an Associated Press release, “McCorvey stated, ‘My case was wrongfully decided, and has caused great harm to the women and children of our nation.’” McCorvey, 53, now lives in Dallas and is active in anti-abortion causes.<sup>33</sup>

---

<sup>32</sup> *Microsoft® Encarta® Encyclopedia 2001*. © 1993-2000 Microsoft Corporation. All rights reserved.

<sup>33</sup> “*Roe vs. Wade's Jane Roe files friend-of-court briefs opposing abortion*,” the Associated Press, The Sentinel, Lewistown, Pa., USA 6/1/01, p. A8.

## WHAT DOES GOD SAY?

God is the creator. He set the rules. He obviously considers an embryo a precious being:

For thou hast possessed my reins: thou hast covered me in my mother's womb. I will praise thee; for I am fearfully and wonderfully made: marvelous are thy works; and that my soul knoweth right well. My substance was not hid from thee, when I was made in secret, and curiously wrought in the lowest parts of the earth. (Psalms 139:13-15)

All Jews and Christians should willingly follow His rules. It is unfortunate that the rest of the world does not know the God that made them. They live without the true God; therefore, their laws are of them and their fabricated gods, and are set by man. Let us search God's word, for what He does say:

Thou shalt not kill. (Exodus 20:13)

Keep thee far from a false matter; and the innocent and righteous slay thou not: for I will not justify the wicked. (Exodus 23:7)

We will not hide them from their children, shewing to the generation to come the praises of the Lord, and his strength, and his wonderful works that he hath done. For he established a testimony in Jacob, and appointed a law in Israel, which he commanded our fathers, that they should make them known to their children: That the generation to come might know them, even the children which should be born; who should arise and declare them to their children: That they might set their hope in God, and not forget the works of God, but keep his commandments: (Psalms 78:4-7)

Lo, children are an heritage of the Lord: and the fruit of the womb is his reward. As arrows are in the hand of a mighty man; so are children of one's youth. Happy is the man that hath his quiver full of them: they shall not be ashamed, but they shall speak with the enemies in the gate. (Psalms 127:3-5)

Thy wife shall be as a fruitful vine by the sides of thine house: thy children like olive plants round about thy table. (Psalms 128:3)

The highway of the upright is to depart from evil: he that keepeth his way preserveth his soul. Pride goeth before destruction, and an haughty spirit before a fall. Better it is to be of an humble spirit with the lowly, than to divide the spoil with the proud. (Proverbs 16:17-19)

Children's children are the crown of old men; and the glory of children are their fathers. (Proverbs 17:6)

**The Prophet Jeremiah:** Then the word of the Lord came unto me saying, **Before I formed thee in the womb, I knew thee; and before thou camest forth out of the womb, I sanctified thee, and I ordained thee a prophet** unto the nations.

(Jeremiah 1:4-5)

According to scripture, abortion is murder. Killing unborn babies violates the Ten Commandments. God consecrated the prophet Jeremiah before he was formed in his mother's womb (Jeremiah 1:4-5). John the Baptist was filled with the Holy Spirit while in his mother's womb (Luke 1:13-15). It is probable, in my opinion, that all babies receive their souls while in their mothers' womb. Dr. Cushner's testimony implies that abortion is for the convenience of people that sinned due to lust, and needed a remedy for a situation they did not want. In other words, convenience.

## A MATTER OF CONVENIENCE

From an article by the Associated Press<sup>34</sup> about an AMA recommendation of selling the morning-after pill over-the-counter: Joan Coombs, senior vice president of Planned Parenthood said, "This is a wonderful (recommendation) by the AMA." She said widespread use of the morning-after pill could prevent 1.7 million unplanned pregnancies and 800,000 abortions annually.

This pill will abort pregnancies if taken within three days of intercourse. This is still murder just as much as if it were using forceps on a 5-month old fetus. I guess at 3 days, one does not look, feel, or act pregnant, so it appears to be "no big deal." Contrary to the implication by Ms. Coombs, this is still abortion.

## HOW THEY KILL THE BABIES

*D&C. Dilation and Curettage* is a common procedure. The baby is cut into pieces with a sharp scraping instrument after the cervix is dilated with several other instruments.

*VACUUM ASPIRATION. Suction Curettage* is as above except that instead of cutting the baby with a curette, a strong suction tube is used. The suction dismembers the baby and vacuums it into a jar.

*D&E. Dilation and Evacuation* is a method of killing larger babies of 12-20 weeks of age. Sharp-teethed forceps are used to tear-away the baby's body piece by piece. Usually, the baby's head is too large to be extracted whole. In this event, the head must be crushed and drained prior to removal.

*SALINE INJECTION.* Still larger babies (after 16 weeks) are killed by *saline poisoning*. A salt solution is injected through the mother's abdomen into the womb. The baby suffers, kicks, and jerks violently for over an hour until it dies. Within 24 hours, labor will begin. Usually the baby is born dead, others need more time of nonattendance to die.

*CAESAREAN SECTION.* Just as *c-section* is used to deliver wanted babies, the same procedure is used to deliver the unwanted. After delivery, the baby is allowed to die by neglect. This

---

<sup>34</sup> Branom, Mike, "AMA recommends selling morning-after pill over-the-counter," The Associated Press, The Daily Item, Sunbury, Pa., USA 12/6/00 p. A6.

procedure is used in the last 3 months of pregnancy. Many of these babies at this stage could live if wanted.

**CHEMICAL ABORTION.** Chemicals developed by a pharmaceutical company are used to perform a *prostaglandin chemical abortion*. The chemicals cause intense contractions so strong that generally the contractions kill the baby. Some of the babies are born alive and allowed to die.

**PARTIAL BIRTH.** In *D&X* abortion, the cervix is dilated. The baby is pulled into the birth canal in breech fashion. An incision is made in the baby's head. The brain is removed by suction, collapsing the head. The body is then "delivered."

We are in the twenty-first century. We think we are so smart and advanced. How can we not see that abortion is murder?

## CHURCH-BASED COUNSELING

If you are in a situation of recommending counseling to a woman with a pregnancy concern, by all means recommend counseling associated with your religious affiliation. A secular medical facility is influenced by the evolutionary thought processes we read about earlier, and is biased by "of the flesh" mentality- we are just high animal forms responsible only to ourselves.

I am a man writing about a decision I will never have to face; but I do know that church-based counselors can offer a message of love in a time of turmoil. Talk to these tenderhearted women if you have a need. Let them guide you to a responsible decision, an informed decision, and the right decision.

## THE ADOPTION OPTION

Unwanted pregnancies are usually the sad results of people having a good (lustful) time and not willing to pay the consequences. Pregnancies should be joyous results, blessings from God of happy, marital unions. Unwanted pregnancies have happened for thousands of years.

What was unwanted for some became opportunity for others. Many loving couples that wanted children, but could not have their own, jumped at the chance to adopt babies. There are innumerable couples today that would leap at the opportunity to adopt more than one child.

I have several friends who were adopted as infants. Today they are productive people with families of their own. An acquaintance with an adopted person resulted in a significant contribution to this book. I imagine you know someone who was adopted. If you know that person well, can you imagine the world without them? What if they had been killed in their mother's womb?

## A GLIMMER OF HOPE

If two men are fighting, and in the process hurt a pregnant woman so that she has a miscarriage, but she lives, then the man who injured her shall be fined whatever

amount the woman's husband shall demand, and as the judges approve. (Exodus 21:22)

On April 26, 2001, the U.S. House of Representatives passed a bill making it a crime to harm a fetus. President Bush said, "This legislation affirms our commitment to a culture of life which welcomes and protects *children*." (Emphasis added.)

One year prior, President Clinton had threatened to veto a similar bill. One can reach one's own conclusion as to how Clinton's moralities and actions go hand in hand.

Let us pray that in the future, fetuses are recognized as human beings with complete rights, as God intended. The pro-choice lobbyists will come out fighting. We have to fight back a little harder.

## WHAT CAN YOU DO?

Publicize God's view on abortion. It is murder. Have your church or group of concerned citizens take out full-page pro-life ads in newspapers. Include pictures of aborted babies. Send copies to your congressmen, state and federal.

You can obtain materials on abortion needed for your campaign from the following organizations:

- American Tract Society, PO Box 462008, Garland TX 75046
- Last Days Ministries, Box 40, Lindale TX 75771-0040
- Christian Medical and Dental Society, <http://prnewswire.com>
- See "Abortion Alternatives" in the phone book

Also, check out the following publications:

- Dr. and Mrs. J.C. Willke, *Handbook on Abortion*, Hayes Publishing Co., 6304 Hamilton Avenue, Cincinnati OH 45224
- Dr. Brian Close, *Pro-Life Encyclopedia*, Stafford: American Life League
- Pharmacists for Life International, *New Abortion Drugs, a Health Threat*, PO Box 1281, Powell OH 43065

## NEW TESTAMENT VIEW

Jesus taught countless lessons of kindness in the New Testament, including a very tender attitude toward children. The first passage is a writing from the apostle Paul, the second Christ's words to a group of men keeping children back from him:

<sup>18</sup>All these new things are from God who brought us back to himself through what Christ Jesus did. And God has given us the privilege of urging everyone to come into his favor and be reconciled to him. <sup>19</sup>For God was in Christ, restoring the world to himself, no longer counting men's sins against them but blotting them out. This is the wonderful message he has given us to tell others. <sup>21</sup>We are Christ's ambassadors. God is using us to speak to you: we beg you, as though

Christ himself were here pleading with you, receive the love he offers you--be reconciled to God. (2 Corinthians 5:18-20 Living Bible).

Suffer the little children to come unto me, and forbid them not: for of such is the kingdom of God. Verily I say unto you, Whosoever shall not receive the kingdom of God as a little child, he shall not enter therein. And he took them up in his arms, put his hands upon them, and blessed them. (Mark 10:14b-16)

We do not need to use our imaginations to wonder about Jesus' position on abortion. He would tell us to go into the world and preach the Gospel, and against the pagan or heathen sin of killing unwanted children. The unwanted children are not unwanted by the Messiah.

This chapter was written in the interest of saving the lives of unborn children. As important as the lives of these children are, their earthly lives pale in comparison to their eternal lives. So it is with us, our eternal lives are at stake. The unsaved, dying adult perhaps should rather be a dying baby who, dying at the age of innocence, would go into eternal life.

If you are a dying adult (we are all dying), consider your eternity.



## Chapter 8. Homosexuality: Adam and Eve, or Adam and Steve?



### Lot's Family Flees Sodom

*<sup>22</sup>You shall not lie with a male as with a woman; it is an abomination. <sup>24</sup>Do not defile yourselves by any of these (lusts), for by all these the nations I am casting out before you defiled themselves; <sup>25</sup>and the land became defiled, so that I punished its iniquity, and the land vomited out its inhabitants. (Leviticus 18:22, 24-25 RSV)*

Preface: I have homosexual friends and family whom I love very much. God loves them, too. We are no man's judge. Only God is just and has that right. I am opposed to hate and hate groups of any kind, see chapter 10.

Homosexuality is a volatile, divisive subject today. When I was young, it was a subject whispered. Homosexual behavior was "in the closet." The identity of a person as a homosexual was more often suspected than confirmed. Homosexuality was not well tolerated. It caused troubles in families, in the public, in organizations, churches, the military, and wherever it existed. Homosexuality was considered to be an embarrassment, a subject to avoid, and a perversion that was just plain wrong.

#### NEW WORLD VIEW OF HOMOSEXUALITY

Our attitudes and tolerances have changed. At the present, "gays" are "out of the closet," (the politically correct terms). A person's "sexuality" is no longer secret. Laws have changed to prohibit discrimination against gays and allow homosexual marriages. Churches are ordaining homosexual ministers. An active, large part of the populace supports gay rights, in particular the



fine arts. Though the gay population in the United States is probably under 5%, you could go on camera and say, “I am gay, and that’s okay,” and get a more rousing applause than if you had said almost anything else.

The results of a male sexuality survey were published in *Family Planning Perspectives*, a journal issued by the Alan Guttmacher Institute (April 15, 1993). The...announced findings (were) that only about 1 percent of the male population of the United States was exclusively homosexual.<sup>35</sup>

The number of homosexuals in the population is difficult to determine, and reliable data do not exist. However, current estimates suggest that the term *homosexual* may apply to 2 to 4 percent of men. Estimates for lesbians are lower.<sup>36</sup>

The world is getting more tolerant of just about everything. We are at a stage in time when we are fighting for the rights of anything different, for peoples with disabilities, so-called racial minorities, the right to “Go where you want to go, do what you want to do” in the words of a sixties song. We will fight for the rights of animals and any other cause that comes along, *as long as it is of the flesh or does not involve God!*

Why does the world look favorably on the gay lifestyle? God says it is wrong. Of course, God said He created, and the world does not believe that either. Outside of the framework of the Bible, why should men be with men and women with women? Well, there is common sense. Homosexuality seems very unnatural as there is not much future in it as far as procreation. This world, under the rule of sin, does not want God. Therefore, the only yardstick for morality in the godless world is what the world wants.

## OLD WORLD VIEW

Just a few decades ago, homosexuality was not only considered wrong, but we were afraid of gays. We were afraid they would seduce our children, and “who knows what else.” We were also more strongly influenced by the Bible in times past. Views that went hand-in-hand were; God, Bible, creation, Biblical morals, marriages, families. Today it is new age, evolution, do what you want as long as it is legal, live together (with same or opposite sex), divorce, and no family.

Yesterday’s family was a man and a woman, married, children, went to church together, played together, and stayed together. The parents taught Biblical values to the children, who grew up and started the cycle anew.

Today’s family is larger. It covers more real estate, also. Let us have an imaginary child tell us, “Daddy lives in Pittsburgh with my other Daddy. They moved out there when my first Daddy got out of jail for selling drugs. I live with my Mommy and my other, other Daddy. I have one sister who is my real sister. I have a half-sister. Her other Mommy lives far away. I have 12 Grandfathers and eight grandmothers, but I hardly ever get to see them.”

---

<sup>35</sup> Excerpted from *Compton's Interactive Encyclopedia*. Copyright © 1994, 1995, 1996, 1997 The Learning Company, Inc. All Rights Reserved.

<sup>36</sup> *Microsoft® Encarta® Encyclopedia 2001*. © 1993-2000 Microsoft Corporation. All rights reserved.

## BIBLICAL VIEW

In Leviticus 18:22, God calls homosexuality “an abomination.” (He did not like it). When you do not obey God, he does not like that either. We are not obeying, and we are in a real mess; but do you know, it has been worse than this before. Every former time it has been worse, God has cleaned things up his way. You know of Sodom and Gomorrah, which is where the term “sodomy” came from. You surely recall the account of the destruction of those two cities. There were others:

There was homosexuality throughout the land, and the people of Judah became as depraved as the heathen nations which the Lord drove out to make room for his people. (1 Kings 14:24 Living Bible)

And he broke down the houses of the male cult prostitutes which were in the house of the Lord, where the women wove hangings for the Asherah. (2 Kings 23:7 Revised Standard Version)

Abomination, destruction. Abomination, destruction. Abomination, destruction. I do not want to be there when God casts judgment the next time (read Revelation). When God brought destruction to Sodom and Gomorrah, he was ending a culture of unspeakable perversion. We generally recall this Bible story as Abraham asking God to spare Lot’s family. God sends angels to warn Lot, they leave, Lot’s wife looks back on the fiery destruction, and is turned to a pillar of salt. There is much more to the story, and more perversion than you might recall.

## SODOM AND GOMORRAH

The entire Biblical story is more like a Hollywood version of the brief account above, bringing in sex and violence. Hollywood screenwriter: “OK. These two angels go into town to get Lot. All the gays in town see these handsome angels, and want them. So they try to break into Lot’s house so they can rape the angels. Lot tells them to take his virgin daughters instead, but the townsmen only want the angels. So the angels blind the attackers. Then they go to leave, but they do not want to leave. Some of the family stays. Lot’s wife does not want to leave, but she does. They tell her not to look back, but she does, and immediately turns into a golden statue. Harrison Ford goes over, finds the statue, and brings it to Israel.” That is close. Read the real thing and rediscover why God, who can be nothing less than perfect and just, did what he did.

<sup>1</sup>Two angels came to Sodom; Lot was sitting in the gate. When Lot saw them, he rose to meet them, and bowed himself, <sup>2</sup>and said, "My lords, turn aside, I pray you, to your servant's house and spend the night; then you may rise up early and go on your way." They said, "No; we will spend the night in the street." <sup>3</sup>But he urged them strongly; so they turned aside to him and entered his house; and he made them a feast, and they ate. <sup>4</sup>But before they lay down, the men of Sodom, both young and old, all the people to the last man, surrounded the house; <sup>5</sup>and they called to Lot, "Where are the men who came to you tonight? Bring them out to us, that we may know them." <sup>6</sup>Lot went out of the door to the men, shut the door after him, <sup>7</sup>and said, "I beg you, my brothers, do not act so wickedly. <sup>8</sup>I have two daughters who have not known man; let me bring them to you, and do to them as you please; only do nothing to these men." <sup>9</sup>But they said, "Stand back!"

And they said, "This fellow came to sojourn, and he would play the judge! Now we will deal worse with you than with them." Then they pressed hard against the man Lot, and drew near to break the door. <sup>10</sup>But the (angels) brought Lot into the house, and shut the door. <sup>11</sup>And they struck with blindness the men who were at the door of the house so that they wearied themselves groping for the door. <sup>12</sup>Then the (angels) said to Lot, "Have you any one else here? Sons-in-law, sons, daughters, or any one you have in the city, bring them out; <sup>13</sup>for we are about to destroy this place, because the outcry against its people has become great before the Lord, and the Lord has sent us to destroy it." <sup>14</sup>So Lot went out and said to his sons-in-law, "Up, get out of this place; for the Lord is about to destroy the city." But he seemed to his sons-in-law to be jesting. <sup>15</sup>When morning dawned, the angels urged Lot, saying, "Arise, take your wife and your two daughters who are here, lest you be consumed in the punishment of the city." <sup>16</sup>But he lingered; so the (angels) seized him and his wife and his two daughters by the hand, the Lord being merciful to him, and they set him outside the city. <sup>17</sup>And they said, "Flee for your life; do not look back or stop lest you be consumed." <sup>18</sup>And Lot said to them, "Oh, no, my lords; <sup>19</sup>behold, your servant has found favor in your sight, and you have shown me great kindness in saving my life; but I cannot flee to the hills, lest the disaster overtake me, and I die. (Genesis 19:1-19 RSV, condensed)

In the face of the destruction of the city, Lot did not want to leave. Neither did his wife. She did look back, but the account continues to say she was turned to a pillar of salt, so the "Hollywood version" was slightly wrong.

## IS IT RIGHT OR WRONG?

The Bible says that homosexual behavior is wrong. Therefore it is wrong. The Bible was written to be true for all time. God's word rings as true today as when Moses recorded the first pen stroke. Most everything our culture is doing today on the gay issue is wrong, with the exception of tolerance. There should not be gay marriages. God sanctions marriage; He certainly would not sanction what He calls "an abomination." Gay clergy is wrong, wrong. How can a Gay minister preach about Biblical morals? A message on Sodom and Gomorrah would be very interesting.

## INTOLERANCE

A television program publicized the increase in hate crimes and included a prison interview of a man found guilty of brutally killing another man just because he was gay. When asked why he did the crime, his blunt reply was, "Because he was a faggot." The felon and an accomplice befriended the man for the sole purpose of luring him to a remote location and carrying out a premeditated execution.

The interviewer asked this convicted murderer if he thought the victim's family should forgive him. He said, "They better." As the camera faded, he added, "If they want to go to heaven." This man believed that his crime was justified, and that the problem lies with those who do not see it his way. Further, he implied that he is an enforcer empowered by God.

## INTOLERANCE: CRIME & PUNISHMENT

Gay bashers justify their actions based on the Biblical position on homosexuality, while the rest of us are appalled by mistreatment and murder. There is only one authoritative source to consult; the infallible Word of God. God said:

- *Thou shalt not kill.* (Exodus 20:13).
- *You shall not lie with a male as with a woman; it is an abomination.* (Leviticus 18:22 RSV).

Which is worse? As written by James, the brother of Jesus, *The royal command is found in Scripture: You must love other people the same way you love yourself. If you obey, you are doing fine, but if you treat anyone differently, your deeds are sinful! So, according to the law, you will be judged as wrongdoers. The person who obeys the whole law and yet breaks only one of its commands is as guilty as if he broke all of the commands!* (James 2:8-10 Simple English).

To apply human logic, which commandment was given first? “Thou shalt not kill” was the law given to us first. “Thou shalt not kill” is the law violated by the murderous gay-basher. Another reason that “thou shalt not kill” seems to be a sin of high degree is that it is a sin that takes away, eternally, all chance for the victim’s repentance.

Gay bashers bash gays because of sexual sin, they say; however, there are many forms of sexual sin. In Genesis, God ordains sex between a husband and wife. When Moses recorded Leviticus chapter 18, he penned a thorough text of descriptions of sexual sin. Most of this passage deals with heterosexual adultery.

Merely one verse in this passage is about homosexual contact: *You will not have intercourse with a man as you would with a woman. This is a hateful thing.* (Leviticus 18:22 NJB). The chapter concludes with, *Do not defile yourselves in any of these ways, for these are the things the heathen do; and because they do them I am going to cast them out from the land into which you are going.* (Leviticus 18:24 LVB).

We are no man’s judges. Only God is just and has that right. We probably all have gay acquaintances that we might not know are gay. I have homosexual friends whom I love very much. God loves them, too. The right thing to do is to treat gays with love as we would anyone. Remember the Bible places much more emphasis on heterosexual sin (adultery).

## WHAT TO DO?

You do not need to do anything. Why do we not campaign against robbers and idolaters? If you want to do something, love others.

If you would like information about homosexuality, whether you are gay, have a gay friend or family member, or would simply like to learn more about this divisive subject, there is helpful literature available. Following are organizations having varying viewpoints:

Exodus International, PO Box 77652, Seattle, WA 98177, 888-264-0877 (toll free- USA)  
Others 206-784-7799, Web: [www.exodusintl.org](http://www.exodusintl.org)

Living Hope Ministries, Box 2239, Arlington TX 76004, 817-459-2507  
Web: [www.livehope.org](http://www.livehope.org), E-mail: [info@livehope.org](mailto:info@livehope.org)

Love in Action, PO Box 753307, Memphis TN 38175, 901-542-0250

Whosoever Ministries, Inc., P.O. Box 160177, Atlanta GA 30316

Evangelicals Concerned, Western Region, P.O. Box 19734, Seattle WA 98109-6734  
206-621-8960

#### CONCLUSION: DO NOT BASH (JUDGE) ANYONE

Sexual sin is a difficult temptation. *The Lord knoweth how to deliver the godly out of temptations, and to reserve the unjust unto the day of judgment to be punished: (2 Peter 2:9).* God refuses no one that comes to him, and will reward you if you turn to him and become victorious over any temptation: *Blessed is the man that endureth temptation: for when he is tried, he shall receive the crown of life, which the Lord hath promised to them that love him. (James 1:12).*

What is your sin? Why not give your life to God?



## Chapter 9. Marriage and Divorce: Till Death Do Us Part



And the Lord God said, It is not good that the man should be alone; I will make him an help meet for him. And the Lord God caused a deep sleep to fall upon Adam, and he slept: and he took one of his ribs, and closed up the flesh instead thereof; And the rib, which the Lord God had taken from man, made he a woman, and brought her unto the man. And Adam said, This is now bone of my bones, and flesh of my flesh: she shall be called Woman, because she was taken out of Man. Therefore shall a man leave his father and his mother, and shall cleave unto his wife: and they shall be one flesh. (Genesis 2:18, 21-24)

### WHY MARRIAGE?

Our Father divinely instituted marriage as a sacred union in The Beginning. Marriage ordained by God is:

- A covenant relationship (Malachi 2:1-4).
- Designed for our happiness (Genesis 2:18).
- Joyous (Jeremiah 33:11).
- For increasing the human population (Genesis 1:28).
- For raising Godly seed (Malachi 2:15).
- Expressed by making affinity (1 Kings 3:1).
- Celebrated (Genesis 29:21-22).

- Illustrative of God's union with the Jewish nation (Isaiah 54:5).

The voice of joy, and the voice of gladness, the voice of the bridegroom, and the voice of the bride, the voice of them that shall say, Praise the Lord of hosts: for the Lord is good; for his mercy endureth for ever: and of them that shall bring the sacrifice of praise into the house of the Lord. For I will cause to return the captivity of the land, as at the first, saith the Lord. (Jeremiah 33:11).

Let thy fountain be blessed: and rejoice with the wife of thy youth. Let her be as the loving hind and pleasant roe; let her breasts satisfy thee at all times; and be thou ravished always with her love. And why wilt thou, my son, be ravished with a strange woman, and embrace the bosom of a stranger? (Proverbs 5:18-20).

And God blessed them, and God said unto them, Be fruitful, and multiply, and replenish the earth, and subdue it: and have dominion over the fish of the sea, and over the fowl of the air, and over every living thing that moveth upon the earth. (Genesis 1:28).

Because the Lord hath been witness between thee and the wife of thy youth, against whom thou hast dealt treacherously: yet is she thy companion, and the wife of thy covenant. And did not he make one? Yet had he the residue of the spirit. And wherefore one? That he might seek a godly seed. Therefore take heed to your spirit, and let none deal treacherously against the wife of his youth. (Malachi 2:14-15).

And Solomon made affinity with Pharaoh king of Egypt, and took Pharaoh's daughter, and brought her into the city of David, until he had made an end of building his own house, and the house of the Lord, and the wall of Jerusalem round about. (1 Kings 3:1).

And Jacob said unto Laban, Give me my wife, for my days are fulfilled, that I may go in unto her. And Laban gathered together all the men of the place, and made a feast. (Genesis 29:21-22).

For thy Maker is thine husband; the Lord of hosts is his name; and thy Redeemer the Holy One of Israel; The God of the whole earth shall he be called. (Isaiah 54:5).

Turn, O backsliding children, saith the Lord; for I am married unto you: and I will take you one of a city, and two of a family, and I will bring you to Zion: (Jeremiah 3:14).

And I will betroth thee unto me forever; yea, I will betroth thee unto me in righteousness, and in judgment, and in loving kindness, and in mercies. I will even betroth thee unto me in faithfulness: and thou shalt know the Lord. (Hosea 2:19-20).

## PROPER MARITAL RELATIONSHIPS

By the word “relationships,” much more than “sex” is intended, but let us begin with sex. (Divorce often begins by way of sex with the wrong person.) God made sexual relations pleasurable for us. It is for the pleasure of a married couple joined in union by God for the purposes God intended. The scriptures are quite clear on this. Because this relationship is so pleasurable, it is the most desirable of sins. It is said, I do not know if true, that prostitution is the oldest profession. At any rate, God, being omniscient, has the wisdom to think it prudent to devote many scripture to instruct us in the area of proper sex. The most important point, sex is only for enjoyment *within a marriage*.

The following scriptures all instruct honorable relationships between husband and wife. The husband is to honor his wife; the wife is to honor her husband. They are to be of one flesh. God sanctifies the marriages of believers. No one is to come between them. He who comes between them sins against God:

Live joyfully with the wife whom thou lovest all the days of the life of thy vanity, which he hath given thee under the sun, all the days of thy vanity: for that is thy portion in this life, and in thy labour which thou takest under the sun. (Ecclesiastes 9:9).

Who can find a virtuous woman? for her price is far above rubies. (Proverbs 31:10).

The following is condensed from the Living Bible. It rings a bit “Mel Brooks-ish,” but the consequences, even by the standards of modern law, are not too funny:

If a man sleeps with his father's wife, he has defiled what is his father's; both the man and the woman must die. And if a man has sexual intercourse with his daughter-in-law, both shall be executed. The penalty for homosexual acts is death to both parties. If a man has sexual intercourse with a woman and with her mother, it is a great evil. All three shall be burned alive to wipe out wickedness from among you. If a man has sexual intercourse with an animal, he shall be executed and the animal killed. If a woman has sexual intercourse with an animal, kill the woman and the animal. If a man has sexual intercourse with his sister, it is a shameful thing, and they shall publicly be cut off from the people of Israel. If a man has sexual intercourse with a woman during her period of menstruation, both shall be excommunicated. Sexual intercourse is outlawed between a man and his maiden aunt for they are near of kin. If a man has intercourse with his uncle's wife, they shall bear their sin and die childless. If a man marries his brother's wife, this is impurity; and they shall be childless. (From Leviticus 20:11-21 LVB).

To continue:

Cursed be he that lieth with:

His father's wife; because he uncovereth his father's skirt.

Any manner of beast.

His sister, the daughter of his father, or the daughter of his mother.



His mother in law. (From Deuteronomy 27:20-23).

In the New Testament, the relationship between a husband and wife is compared to that of Christ and the Church:

You wives must submit to your husbands' leadership in the same way you submit to the Lord. For a husband is in charge of his wife in the same way Christ is in charge of his body the Church. (He gave his very life to take care of it and be its Savior!) So you wives must willingly obey your husbands in everything, just as the Church obeys Christ. And you husbands, show the same kind of love to your wives as Christ showed to the Church when he died for her, to make her holy and clean, washed by baptism and God's Word; so that he could give her to himself as a glorious Church without a single spot or wrinkle or any other blemish, being holy and without a single fault. That is how husbands should treat their wives, loving them as parts of themselves. For since a man and his wife are now one, a man is really doing himself a favor and loving himself when he loves his wife! No one hates his own body but lovingly cares for it, just as Christ cares for his body the Church, of which we are parts. (That the husband and wife are one body is proved by the Scripture, which says, A man must leave his father and mother when he marries, so that he can be perfectly joined to his wife, and the two shall be one.) I know this is hard to understand, but it is an illustration of the way we are parts of the body of Christ. So again I say, a man must love his wife as a part of himself; and the wife must see to it that she deeply respects her husband--obeying, praising and honoring him. (Ephesians 5:22-33 Living Bible).

Likewise, ye wives, be in subjection to your own husbands; that, if any obey not the word, they also may without the word be won by the conversation of the wives; Likewise, ye husbands, dwell with them according to knowledge, giving honour unto the wife, as unto the weaker vessel, and as being heirs together of the grace of life; that your prayers be not hindered. 1 Peter 3:1, 7).

Another point not to miss: the husband is to be the head of the family *in religious matters* as Christ is the head of the Church. In this the wife is to be submissive. *In this the husband is to take action in leading his family in fellowship with God.*

Do not expect smooth sailing just because you are in God's family. It is wonderful that you can turn to God; but, be prepared to ask for help when you need it. If you have rough spots, recognize them, and then take them to God. Do not yield to weaknesses of the flesh. Prayer is your weapon; use it at the first temptation. If your marriage needs help, take it to a rabbi or counselor trained in the traditional ways. Your solution is found within the scriptures. And most of all *save your marriage because your marriage is worth saving.*

## WHY DIVORCE?

Marriage is honourable in all, and the bed undefiled: but whoremongers and adulterers God will judge. (Hebrews 13:4).

We Americans are spoiled with our land-of-plenty-get-anything-we-want. We trade cars

at the drop of a hat. We buy a bigger house. We put in a pool. We fill in the pool and make a flower garden and spa. Do we get tired of our spouses and trade them in on a newer model? Maybe one with more money or brighter lipstick? Is that why we have the highest divorce rate in the world?

I hope those reasons are just me being silly. I really do not know the answer and do not know if anyone does know why America, largely Judeo-Christian, has such a high divorce rate. Perhaps divorces are so easy to get, and are easier to get than the work required saving a marriage. Maybe we do not get married for the right reasons. Once my father told me “Mom is my best friend” (author’s mother). When Dad said that they had been married approximately 40 years. I thought that was really unique, and sweet. Years later I realized that the same thing had happened to me. Is that because Jeanne and I married for the right reasons, because we took any problems to God, or simply because our original goal of staying married stayed our goal?

Why does that not work for everyone? What are the major reasons for divorce? Typical grounds have included adultery; desertion; habitual drunkenness; conviction of a felony (and subsequent incarceration); and, cruel and inhuman treatment. According to the scriptures, we are not supposed to do these things to begin with. If the people that get divorced for these reasons would have followed God’s will to begin with, the point would be moot, or more practically, there would be far fewer divorces.

The divorce rates are not getting any better. In fact, the statistics show a sad trend. In the United States from 1920 through 1965, the divorce rate increased from 2 per 1000 population to 3, up by 50%. In the shorter period from 1965 through 1995, the rate went up another 50%. Americans exceed our closest “statistical rival,” Cuba, by 16%. We exceed Canada by 65%. Our rate of 4.3 nearly triples Israel. The past few years the rate dropped off slightly; but the statistics are biased by the great popularity of “living together.” Break-ups of live-in relationships do not figure into the national divorce statistics.

We are obviously “doing it all wrong.” We are not paying attention to God’s rules. We are following man’s rules. We are following the law of “We evolved, we don’t need God, forget Genesis, forget the Bible, if it feels good do it.” I tell you it feels good because God made it, God ordained it, but unfortunately it feels good when you do it wrong. If you make the mistake of fleeting pleasure, can you live with yourself? God ordained marriage, and said, *Thou shalt not commit adultery.* (Exodus 20:14). Period.

## WHAT CONSTITUTES ADULTERY?

Thou shalt not lie carnally with thy neighbor’s wife (Leviticus 18:20).

Adultery is plainly described in Leviticus chapters 18 and 20, and many other places in the Bible. The Biblical consequences are dire. This sin made it to the “Top Ten” list that God engraved on stone with His own finger.

Do you recall *The Scarlet Letter*, a novel about an adulteress who had to display a red “A” on her breast to proclaim her sin? Perhaps some of today’s confusion comes from Biblical law and the law of the land being similar in more moral times, but today, publicly, nearly anything goes.

Today it might be legal to run off with your neighbor’s wife for a couple of hours, *but that does not mean God changed His mind!* Hear His word: *Be ye mindful always of his covenant; the word which he commanded to a thousand generations;* (1 Chronicles 16:15). That verse means God’s word (law) is unchanging.

The following New Testament scripture that refers to the law unchanging. Christ, not being accepted by many, was often tested:

And he arose from thence, and cometh into the coasts of Judaea by the farther side of Jordan: and the people resort unto him again; and, as he was wont, he taught them again. And the Pharisees came to him, and asked him, Is it lawful for a man to put away his wife? tempting him. And he answered and said unto them, What did Moses command you? And they said, Moses suffered to write a bill of divorcement, and to put her away. (Mark 10:1-4).

Christ's "final answer":

Jesus answered and said unto them, For the hardness of your heart he wrote you this precept. But from the beginning of the creation God made them male and female. For this cause shall a man leave his father and mother, and cleave to his wife; And they twain shall be one flesh: so then they are no more twain, but one flesh. What therefore God hath joined together, let not man put asunder. And in the house his disciples asked him again of the same matter. And he saith unto them, Whosoever shall put away his wife, and marry another, committeth adultery against her. And if a woman shall put away her husband, and be married to another, she committeth adultery. (Mark 10:5-12).

## WHAT IS LUST?

Keep thee from the evil woman, from the flattery of the tongue of a strange woman. Lust not after her beauty in thine heart; neither let her take thee with her eyelids. For by means of a whorish woman a man is brought to a piece of bread: and the adulteress will hunt for the precious life. Can a man take fire in his bosom, and his clothes not be burned? Can one go upon hot coals, and his feet not be burned? So he that goeth in to his neighbour's wife; whosoever toucheth her shall not be innocent. (Proverbs 6:24-29).

Ye have heard that it was said by them of old time, Thou shalt not commit adultery: But I say unto you, That whosoever looketh on a woman to lust after her hath committed adultery with her already in his heart. It hath been said, Whosoever shall put away his wife, let him give her a writing of divorcement: But I say unto you, That whosoever shall put away his wife, saving for the cause of fornication, causeth her to commit adultery: and whosoever shall marry her that is divorced committeth adultery. (Matthew 5:27-28, 31-32).

Lust: "desire for indulgence of sex, especially excessive sexual desire," from the World Book Dictionary. Different than adultery in that lust is "thinking about it" rather than doing it. Christ's words "*But I say unto you, That whosoever looketh on a woman to lust after her hath committed adultery with her already in his heart.*" (Matthew 5:28). It sounds like Jesus made a big deal out of one person thinking another looks pretty cute, well more than cute. There is no gray with God. It is right or wrong, so "lusting," which is "lusting of adultery" is wrong, which makes it a sin.

Here is a more descript reference from Leviticus 18:20-24: *thou shalt not lie carnally with thy neighbour's wife. And thou shalt not let any of thy seed pass through the fire to Molech, neither shalt thou profane the name of thy God: I am the Lord. Thou shalt not lie with mankind, as with womankind: it is abomination. Neither shalt thou lie with any beast to defile thyself therewith: neither shall any woman stand before a beast to lie down thereto: it is confusion. Defile not ye yourselves in any of these things: for in all these the nations are defiled which I cast out before you:* (Molech was a god of the Ammonites to whom children were sacrificed by fire).

I examined every verse in the Kings James Version in which the word “lust” appears. In every instance, the context is that of a “bad” word. Lust is something we must conquer.

## LUST RESEARCH

If you would like to learn more from in-depth information on lust as well as explicit color photos, you might try the elementary school library. Many libraries’ computers are connected to the internet with no restrictions. Your friendly civil liberties watchdogs are trying to keep it that way. There is a federal law soon to be in effect that will block certain grants from libraries that do not install computer-filtering software that block obscene material. This we hope will limit the pornography available to children.

My wife is a library assistant at a public elementary school. When researching via the internet, pornographic material routinely appears on her screen in response to certain key words. Recently, one such incident resulted from searching “jaguar.”

What being might be behind a movement of valiant attorneys and volunteers that fight so hard to make sure our children are not forced to see something like the Bible? Who might be so opposed to tender little children not learning the Ten Commandments?

## HOW TO DEFEAT LUST

Perhaps you vow to never lust again. You cannot guarantee to keep that vow any more than many other sins. You might be more successful at “thou shalt not steal.” A different part of the brain controls that sin. Most of us are pretty good at “thou shalt not kill.” But you know it is absolutely impossible to avoid all sin, no matter how much willpower you have. Eventually, you will see someone of the opposite sex, think that person looks wonderful, covet that person, and lie to your spouse, “I didn’t look,” and sin deeper and deeper. At least the lying part might break the chain of lust.

Through prayer *ahead of time*, ask God to help you avoid lust. Quickly look away from the first glimpse of a problem, be mentally prepared to put it out of your mind, and pray during the moment and afterward. Why would you pray ahead of time? For the same reason that you ask for safety ahead of time. You would not ask God to supernaturally repair your car after an accident because you forgot to ask for safety beforehand.

You can only beat lust through prayer and fellowship with God. Following are writings of some of the apostles listed as good advice on resisting and overcoming our temptations:

Submit yourselves therefore to God. Resist the devil, and he will flee from you.  
Draw nigh to God, and he will draw nigh to you. Cleanse your hands, ye sinners;  
and purify your hearts, ye double minded. (James 4:7-8)

Now the body is not for fornication, but for the Lord; and the Lord for the body. Flee fornication. Every sin that a man doeth is without the body; but he that committeth fornication sinneth against his own body. What? know ye not that your body is the temple of the Holy Ghost which is in you, which ye have of God, and ye are not your own? (1 Corinthians 6:13b, 18-19)

The Lord knoweth how to deliver the godly out of temptations, and to reserve the unjust unto the day of judgment to be punished: (2 Peter 2:9)

Blessed is the man that endureth temptation: for when he is tried, he shall receive the crown of life, which the Lord hath promised to them that love him. (James 1:12)

For all that is in the world, the lust of the flesh, and the lust of the eyes, and the pride of life, is not of (God), but is of the world. And the world passeth away, and the lust thereof: but he that doeth the will of God abideth forever. (1 John 2:16-17)

When you read the words of the Bible, it is very apparent that God knows how difficult our temptations are, especially temptations of the flesh. Look how much more scripture deals with sexual sin than other sins. But you see how wonderful God is! God describes a righteous life for us. He prescribes a righteous life for us. The Messiah is to conquer the very world for us that is causing our sin. We do not have to perish due to sexual sin, be it lust or adultery, or homosexuality, or for any other sin. God has promised a Redeemer. Praise God! Amen.



## Chapter 10. Racism and Prejudice: How Many Skin Colors Are There?



Jesus said unto him, thou shalt love thy neighbor as thyself. (Matthew 22:37,39.)

### IS RACISM “CHRISTIAN-LIKE”?

Upstanding behavior is often referred to as Christian-like conduct in view of Jesus Christ’s example of doing unto others, loving our enemies, and all that. I, a Christian, was fast to denounce the likes of the fanatical movement that was involved with the 9-11 terrorism. What about terrorism from “Christians?”

Here is a story of “Christians”:

The words, or similar, heard on a television documentary were, “We represent the ‘White Race’ and the church of Jesus Christ. We are at war with the (African-Americans) and the Jews. White power! White power!” Camouflage-clad “White Americans” from a camp somewhere in a forest spoke this. Thank you White Supremacists for showing us the way! How would the rest of us know whom to hate if it were not for you?

Help me sort this out. We should buy guns, army fatigues, and start a cult. Then we set up camp, build fences, and keep the “undesirables” out. Then we pray as hard as we can to God for guidance:

“Lord, we call upon you for wisdom. We know that your only begotten Son was a Jew. We know from the Good Book, John 1:11, that He came first unto his own. We realize that since He was born in the Middle East, He most likely had darker skin than we have, and brown eyes. And Lord, we know He spoke Aramaic, but only because the English language was not formed yet. We also are mindful that the first Christians were Jews, and that we might be their descendents. (Time out, God. Hey guys, why is it that we do not like Jews?) Anyhow God, we still have all those other people with dark skin that Jesus would not want us to like. They have no place in your Kingdom. (Time out again, God. Guys, what about the New Testament and the Ethiopians,

and the Jews that are God's chosen people and are darker than us? Should blonde, blue eyed, fair complexioned Scandinavians hate us? What about Africans that love God?) We are back, God. We surely want to hate someone for your sake. We will erect signs to keep them out of our camp. We will prophesy death to their race in your name. Lord, please lead us to the enemy."

That mock prayer, of course, was to make a point; but was it far from fact as to why people hate? The real issue of this chapter is to review all of the genetic differences between the races, the different skin colors, and so forth that establish all the races of the world. Some of the racial differences were said to be punishment from God, Ham for example. In the end it is unimportant. I suppose we will all be the proper color in Heaven. Hold on, I am not done having my fun with mockery!

What if I told you there is very small genetic difference between a seven-foot African, a six-foot Caucasian, and a five-foot Oriental? How about if I told you there are less than four skin colors? Less than three? Less than two? Adam and Eve probably had the "proper" skin color. What color was it? I will bet there are fewer races than you think.

## HOW MANY SKIN COLORS ARE THERE?

God that made the world and all things therein, seeing that he is Lord of heaven and earth, dwelleth not in temples made with hands; Neither is worshipped with men's hands, as though he needed any thing, seeing he giveth to all life, and breath, and all things; And hath made of one blood all nations of men for to dwell on all the face of the earth, and hath determined the times before appointed, and the bounds of their habitation; That they should seek the Lord, if haply they might feel after him, and find him, though he be not far from every one of us: For in him we live, and move, and have our being; as certain also of your own poets have said, For we are also his offspring. (Acts 17:24-28)

When I learned the answer to this question I was astonished. I was so happy with the answer and my newfound wisdom that at every opportunity I would ask anyone a shade different than me, "Do you know how many skin colors there are? Probably the only thing that kept me from getting beat up is I look somewhat harmless, plus I suppose I caught them off guard.

The first that I heard the question of "how many skin colors" was the first time I heard a creation scientist speak in person, Dr. Gary Parker. When he asked the question, some "dummy" up front held up one finger. Well, that turned out to be the correct answer. What? Dr. Parker told us that we all have one skin color, colored by melanin. Our genes cause some of us to have more melanin than others, so some are darker, some lighter, in varying shades. The only exceptions are albinos, who have no melanin.

Melanin is also what colors our hair and eyes. You might recall from school a little lesson in heredity involving the eyes. Big B is "brown," little b is "blue." You inherit one B or b from each parent. Brown is dominant. If you inherit BB or Bb, you will have brown eyes. If you inherit bb, you will have blue eyes. Chalk up variations to mutations.

With skin, we each have four genes, represented by upper and lower case A and B, AaBb for example. AABB would be darkest, aabb lightest. The sixteen-square chart below shows five possible shades, but skin thickness and the fat beneath the skin can vary this somewhat further:

	<b>AB</b>	<b>Ab</b>	<b>aB</b>	<b>ab</b>
<b>AB</b>	<b>AABB</b>	<b>AABb</b>	<b>AaBB</b>	<b>AaBb</b>
<b>Ab</b>	<b>AABb</b>	<b>AAbb</b>	<b>AaBb</b>	<b>Aabb</b>
<b>aB</b>	<b>AaBB</b>	<b>AaBb</b>	<b>aaBB</b>	<b>aaBb</b>
<b>ab</b>	<b>AaBb</b>	<b>Aabb</b>	<b>aaBb</b>	<b>aabb</b>

Earlier I made a supposition that Adam and Eve most likely had the “proper” skin color. It is probable that they both had something similar to AaBb genes. Two parents with those combinations could literally produce all 5-shade variations.

## SO WHERE DID ALL THE “SHADES” COME FROM?

The above chart shows how shades of light through dark can happen. It is a matter of DNA programming created by God from the beginning. Why? How?

Scientists agree on variety within kind regardless if their religion is evolution or the Living God. In the dog family for example, the consensus is that all canines today came from an original wolf-like animal. Packs of these canines became isolated in different geographical areas. Over time they encountered different climates, food sources, competition, interaction with humans, and reduced gene pools. Variety began to occur. This is not evolution, this is variety allowed by the genes God gave them. Further, man has taken the dog kinds and bred them for special features, creating all the breeds we have today. (Does this not show a wondrous Creator, programming so much variation into just one original kind?)

The same scenario happened with skin shade (not color) as with dog varieties. Different peoples experienced the same differences in nature as the canines. Some situations favored lighter skin, some favored darker. Now this is a departing point on “variety:” Some evolutionists believe dark skin evolved as a need; creationists believe the dark genes were there from the beginning. In hot, sunny climates, the lighter genes were less in favor and eventually were largely eliminated. The reverse would happen in Scandinavia where lighter skin colors would be needed to allow adequate vitamin D production. In Africa, darker skin would be needed to avoid skin cancer. Those traits would be favored and become dominant in the end.

So, it was God that created or caused all of the skin shades, which was done to protect us all. What about the curse of Ham? We all have heard that God cursed Ham and made his skin dark so that he and his descendents would be in disfavor, and abused by the rest of the world.

## CURSE OF HAM

<sup>20</sup>And Noah...planted a vineyard: <sup>21</sup>And he drank of the wine, and was drunken; and he was uncovered within his tent. <sup>22</sup>And Ham, the father of Canaan, saw the nakedness of his father, and told his two brethren without. <sup>23</sup>And Shem and Japheth took a garment, and laid it upon both their shoulders, and went backward, and covered the nakedness of their father; and their faces were backward, and they saw not their father's nakedness. <sup>24</sup>And Noah awoke from his wine, and knew



what his younger son had done unto him. <sup>25</sup>And he said, **Cursed be Canaan; a servant of servants shall he be unto his brethren.** <sup>26</sup>And he said, Blessed be the Lord God of Shem; and Canaan shall be his servant. <sup>27</sup>God shall enlarge Japheth, and he shall dwell in the tents of Shem; and Canaan shall be his servant. (Genesis 9:20-27)

Most of us believe that Ham was cursed, and that because of this curse, when Noah said “Cursed be Canaan; a servant of servants shall he be unto his brethren,” that Canaan’s descendents were dark skinned. This was a convenient belief for white people who thought dark skinned people were lesser and sanctioned by God to be slaves. Although it was Ham that sinned, *Canaan’s descendents* were cursed. Nowhere is skin color or anything else physical mentioned.

I never heard of a “dark skin curse” from my parents or any church. I did hear it from other sources and formerly regarded it as a “common knowledge” fact. The answer to the question of this curse, found in Genesis 9, is found in Genesis 10:

<sup>15</sup>And Canaan begat Sidon his firstborn, and Heth, <sup>16</sup>And the Jebusite, and the Amorite, and the Girgasite, <sup>17</sup>And the Hivite, and the Arkite, and the Sinite, <sup>18</sup>And the Arvadite, and the Zemarite, and the Hamathite: and afterward were the families of **the Canaanites spread abroad.** <sup>19</sup>**And the border of the Canaanites was from Sidon, as thou comest to Gerar, unto Gaza; as thou goest, unto Sodom, and Gomorrah, and Admah, and Zeboim, even unto Lasha.** (Genesis 10:15-19)

One’s descendents being destined to die by a rain of fire in the cities of Sodom and Gomorrah is a pretty bad curse! God by his omniscience and foreknowledge knew this to be their fate, though they had free will. Our sin in this is to assume that dark skin is “bad.” In any event, God created dark skin, light skin, and medium skin, *And God saw every thing that He had made, and, behold, it was very good.* (Genesis 1:31).

## MORE SIN & CONFOUNDED LANGUAGE

<sup>1</sup>And the whole earth was of one language, and of one speech. <sup>2</sup>And it came to pass, as they journeyed...they found a plain...and they dwelt there. <sup>3</sup>And they said one to another, Go to, let us make brick, and...mortar. <sup>4</sup>And they said, Go to, let us build us a city and a tower, whose top may reach unto heaven; and let us make us a name, lest we be scattered abroad upon the face of the whole earth. <sup>5</sup>And the Lord came down to see the city and the tower, which the children of men builded. <sup>6</sup>And the Lord said, Behold, the people is one, and they have all one language; and this they begin to do: and now nothing will be restrained from them, which they have imagined to do. <sup>7</sup>Go to, let us go down, and there confound their language, that they may not understand one another's speech. <sup>8</sup>So the Lord scattered them abroad from thence upon the face of all the earth: and they left off to build the city. <sup>9</sup>Therefore is the name of it called Babel; because the Lord did there confound the language of all the earth: and from thence did the Lord scatter them abroad upon the face of all the earth. (Genesis 11:1-9)

To this point in the Bible, God created a perfect universe *ex nihilo* (out of nothing). Man sinned. God tossed Adam and Eve out of Eden. Man continued to sin, so God destroyed everything that breathed, except for what He put on an ark. After that, He had to destroy two wicked cities with a rain of fire. Next and last to that point, God had to confound language to get us to slow down our wicked, and now scheming ways. Would we learn?

## THE DAYS OF PELEG

And unto Eber were born two sons: the name of one was Peleg; for (because) in his days was the earth divided; [Peleg- literally, division] (Genesis 10:25; 1 Chronicles 1:19)

If one examines a globe, it is not too difficult to imagine disassembly of the globe with a razor, and reassembly in a fashion whereby all of the continents interlock. There is much scientific evidence for this. Well, not that God carved the earth with a razor, but that the continents once were interlocked. My opinion is that this arrangement certainly existed at one time. I do not think that the why, how, and when matter that much to this chapter. If you care to look into this topic, search “continental drift” and “plate tectonics.” Be sure to include *The Answers Book* and *The Young Earth* as sources in your search (see Recommended Reading).

There is disagreement among Bible scholars as to whether the reference to Peleg refers to the time of continental drift. One certainty is that there was some type of division of the earth in the days of Peleg. It was important enough to mention in two books of the Old Testament, interestingly with nearly the same wording. Some believe that the division in the days of Peleg was the formation of rivers and possibly other physical boundaries that further divided the inhabitants on earth rather than continental drift, which perhaps occurred prior to this.

The division was another means for God to scatter us. This was not necessarily a punishment. If it were, my belief is that more detail would be given in the Bible. This might well have been part of the original plan to disperse the population as we grew in God’s command to “multiply and fill the earth.” The result of the division was further diversification of people groups and within the animal kinds. It apparently worked; look at us now!

## IF ONLY ONE SKIN COLOR, HOW MANY RACES?

And hath made of one blood all nations of men to dwell on all the face of the earth (Acts 17:26)

There is more to “race” than color, right? I remember very well singing a Sunday school song, “Jesus loves the little children, all the children of the world. Red and Yellow, Black and White, They are precious in his sight...”

Let us assume for the sake of argument that there are four races and four skin colors. Take a piece of paper the “color” of your skin and hold it next to your skin. It is not red, yellow, black, or white, is it? Is it some kind of a brown shade?

From the Bible we are taught that we all came from Adam through Noah. The evolutionists are now “seeing the light” that we all came from an “Eve” in Africa. So where did we split into “races?” Answer: we did not. Race is our *perception*. To repeat the statistic, there is less than a 1% difference in the DNA make-up between any of us on this earth. Race is not a concept from God. It seems that for convenience we want to divide God’s children into either advanced or disadvantaged groups.

Shame on us, there is only one “race,” the Human Race, or better, “God’s Race.” To my

thinking, racism fits evolutionary thinking, not creationist philosophy.

## SCIENCE AND RACISM

Racism affects the way scientists think, and the judgment they use when they observe and analyze their findings. The Learning Channel aired “Tracking the First Americans” in April 2001. This program started with the traditional hypothesis that the first Americans came from Asia across the Bering Strait. These early Americans were termed “Mongoloids” on this program, and their origins would agree with possible creationist accounts of how the first Americans arrived after the Noahic flood.

Where the traditional scientists differ is with what they concluded from human fossils found that they believe predate the “Mongoloids.” An ancient skull was found in Brazil and sent to a forensic scientist for reconstruction. The result was an “African” looking human. This created problems for the scientists; how to account for African features from Mongoloids?

The scientists ultimately concluded that the earliest Americans were not the Mongoloids, but were aboriginal, having most likely sailed from Australia. Later, the Mongoloids encroached from the north and conquered the aboriginals.

A Biblical creationist might have a simpler story for the “aboriginal” Americans. The antediluvian world was different. Man replenished the earth prior to the flood as commanded by God. We cannot know how the gene pool was spread during that time. What looks African now could have been South American then (we don’t and can’t even know how the continents were before the flood). The ancient skull was most likely from someone that died before the flood or possibly that perished in the flood. So the Americas were replenished first by one people-group before the flood, then another after the flood. The answer is simple when you look to the Bible.

## PREJUDICE

I have wonderful memories of the adults in my church as I grew up. It was a large, yet close, church family. Many of the men were my heroes. They sang in the choir, taught my Sunday school classes, and took us kids on outings. I saw them hit the ball for a mile playing softball at picnics. Mostly I saw them at church. They all sort of looked alike- men in dark suits. They were all equals as far as I was concerned, and always treated as equals by my parents in word and deed, and why not.

As I grew older and got around town more, I began seeing the men in their secular jobs. Some of them looked exactly as they did on Sundays. As executives, that was their attire. I saw some of the other men dressed differently. Some did maintenance work, utility work, worked in a factory, and so on. The different wardrobe seemed strange to me because I was accustomed to seeing them in suits. My father did a little bit of everything in a family-owned furniture store. I remember Dad favoring plaid sport shirts and navy blue trousers.

These men all looked the same at church, and all that were the same in the faith *were* the same. During the week they perhaps looked different, but they were all the same then, also. This world would be prejudiced against one group or the other based on social standards, the poor against the rich, and the rich against the poor. How foolish! In Heaven I am sure that God has selected but one wardrobe for his people. We should think no differently of others based on earthly yardsticks:

## HATE GROUPS

- He that despiseth his neighbour sinneth: but he that hath mercy on the poor, happy is he. (Proverbs 14:21)
- Be not hasty in thy spirit to be angry: for anger resteth in the bosom of fools. (Ecclesiastes 7:9)
- He that loveth not knoweth not God; for God is love. (1 John 4:8)
- Words of Christ: *But I say unto you, That whosoever is angry with his brother without a cause shall be in danger of the judgment:* (Matthew 5:22a). *Wherefore, my beloved brethren, let every man be swift to hear, slow to speak, slow to wrath:* (James 1:19).

The most infamous of American hate groups is the Ku Klux Klan, because of their one-time numbers, public displays, and horrific atrocities. I am unaware of any official counts of individuals who hate “other groups.” Unfortunately, I expect that the membership of the KKK, skinheads, neo-nazis, and other organized hate groups combined are greatly exceeded by a head count of all other “unregistered” American bigots. What are we doing?

How did this scenario develop as far as groups hating blacks, especially in the south: First, Africans are hunted like animals; then we drag them over here, sell them like livestock, and put them into slavery. While totally under our control, we treat them inhumanely. Then we fight a war over them because we do not want to lose them. A “club” formed called the KKK because now we hate them? Satan must be relaxed and settled into cruise control.

The KKK began due to opinion that the Reconstruction governments were hostile to the white South. They also had a racist belief that the blacks had an innate inferiority. Membership was only open to native-born, white, Protestant males, 16 years of age or older. Blacks, Roman Catholics, and Jews were excluded. In fact, they too became targets of hate crimes by the Klan. Our country has also seen, and still sees, hatred and/or discrimination toward other groups: women, Native Americans, homosexuals, Polish, Russian, Italian, Irish, Germans, Swedes, Asians, many religious groups, and more.

In the land of “In God We Trust” we are ignoring God’s Word. We are not following the teachings of God, or what He tells us about “racism” in Genesis. We must love one another as God loves us, and do all we can to discourage the hate. Hate crimes laws and penalties are getting tougher and are a step in the right direction. We have a long way to go.

## LOVE GROUPS & ENDING RACISM

Have we not all one father? hath not one God created us? why do we deal treacherously every man against his brother, by profaning the covenant of our fathers? (Malachi 2:10).

What would be the ultimate love one could show for another? Dying for him? How about, eternally dying for him? Moses was willing to do just that: *So Moses returned to the Lord and said, Oh, these people have sinned a great sin, and have made themselves gods of gold. Yet now if you will only forgive their sin--and if not, then blot me out of the book you have written.* (Exodus 32:31-32 Living Bible). If we could show a bit of that love, we could end racism.

One way to do away with racism is to do away with the word “Race.” We are God’s Race, broken into people groups. It takes love to end hate and racism. We will never conquer hate, for Satan is loose, but we can make life much better. Let those who hate, and say they do so

in the name of the Lord, hear the Word of God:

But I say unto you, Love your enemies, bless them that curse you, do good to them that hate you, and pray for them which despitefully use you, and persecute you; That ye may be the children of your Father which is in heaven: (Matthew 5:44-45a)

But love ye your enemies, and do good, and lend, hoping for nothing again; and your reward shall be great, and ye shall be the children of the Highest: for he is kind unto the unthankful and to the evil. Be ye therefore merciful, as your Father also is merciful. Judge not, and ye shall not be judged: condemn not, and ye shall not be condemned: forgive, and ye shall be forgiven: Give, and it shall be given unto you; good measure, pressed down, and shaken together, and running over, shall men give into your bosom. For with the same measure that ye mete withal it shall be measured to you again. (Luke 6:35-38)

Let all bitterness, and wrath, and anger, and clamour, and evil speaking, be put away from you, with all malice: And be ye kind one to another, tenderhearted, forgiving one another, even as God for Christ's sake hath forgiven you. (Ephesians 4:31-32)

Our movement needs to start with prayer. We need to pray for the hatred to stop; but if we have a little flame of hatred within us, we must start there and extinguish that flame. Remember that only God is worthy to judge us. It is up to us to treat others kindly and to be examples unto them. God will judge the hate and hate activists at the proper time.

We speak of tolerance. Talking is not enough, and tolerance is not enough. It has been said, though not by God, if we cannot love one another, then we should at least tolerate one another. The Bible tells us to love one another. Tolerance only delays the inevitable. If we can generate genuine love, we are light years ahead.

Something else inevitable is eternity. If you hate any man, turn from your hatred. Let God's love guide your love. *The Lord is gracious, and full of compassion, slow to anger, and of great mercy.* (Psalms 145:8). He will make you a new creature. That means, if you confess and turn from a life as the most sinful bigot, he will save you and change you. *As far as the east is from the west, so far hath he removed our transgressions from us.* (Psalms 103:12). *Therefore if any man be in Christ, he is a new creature: old things are passed away; behold, all things are become new.* (2 Corinthians 5:17).

If you want to be a new creature, pray this, "Dear Father in Heaven, I have sinned against you in many ways, including thinking hateful thoughts against others that you love. These dreadful thoughts came because I thought these people were different than me. I know by your Word that we are created equal, in your likeness. Help me to change. Show me according to your scripture how you can save me from my sins, and make me a new man. Please guide me against the deceits of evil. Help me to be a beacon to others so that they see you in me. Amen."



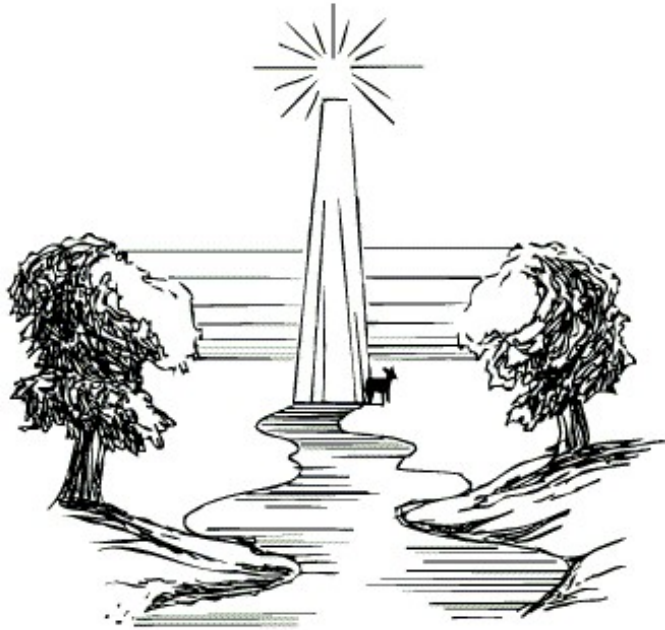
## PART IV WHERE ARE WE GOING FROM HERE?



Now faith is assurance of things hoped for, a conviction of things not seen. For therein the elders had witness borne to them. By faith we understand that the worlds have been framed by the word of God, so that what is seen hath not been made out of things which appear.

Hebrews 11:1-3 ASV

## Chapter 11. Eternity: Is There an Afterlife?



But the mercy of the Lord is from everlasting to everlasting upon them that fear him, and his righteousness unto children's children; To such as keep his covenant, and to those that remember his commandments to do them. The Lord hath prepared his throne in the heavens; and his kingdom ruleth over all. (Psalms 103:17-19).

Do you believe in Reincarnation? Do you believe in God? Do you believe in life after death? Is there a Heaven? Is there a hell? Do you believe in angels? What about near-death experiences?

Reincarnation is a trendy, but not new, debate for those who do not really want to deal with the God of the Bible, yet want to be “spiritual.” The second question, “Do you believe in God,” is actually more legitimate because it does not necessarily lead spiritual argument away from the Bible. If you have read this far, you most likely do believe in God, in eternal life after death in Heaven or eternal punishment in hell, in God’s Holy angels as ministering spirits, and maybe in near-death experiences.

My friend, Shelley Kolbert, challenged me to find Hebrew Bible scriptural basis for salvation and eternal life. It is difficult for a Christian to write about life after death from an Old Testament perspective because our teachings in this regard are generally from the New Testament, the Messiah, and the concept of an Age of Grace, or Church Age. Many fundamentalist pastors even fall into the trap of being a “New Testament” minister, that is, largely ignoring the Old Testament.

Christians would not have much of a religion were it not for The Creation, First Sin, a flood, Moses, the blood of a lamb for atonement- if it were not for Jews there would be no Christians. Let us recognize that Christians are “Jews who believed that Jesus Christ was the Messiah of and for the Jews,” and some “Greeks” who saw the “light.” (I would rather believe my great<sup>x</sup> grandfather was a Messianic Jew than a Greek, but we will never know.)

At any rate, the task at hand was to see what the Old Testament says about life after death. Here, in part, is what it says:

## ETERNAL LIFE

Shelley's question was actually multi-faceted. Is there a salvation v. damnation, and life after death v. end of existence. All go hand in hand based upon the scriptures: yes, there is salvation that leads to eternal life; the one alternative is death with eternal punishment. So, it is one or the other.

<sup>25</sup>For I know that my redeemer liveth, and that he shall stand at the latter day upon the earth: <sup>26</sup>And though after my skin worms destroy this body, yet in my flesh shall I see God: <sup>27</sup>Whom I shall see for myself, and mine eyes shall behold, and not another; though my reins be consumed within me. <sup>28</sup>But ye should say, Why persecute we him, seeing the root of the matter is found in me? <sup>29</sup>Be ye afraid of the sword: for wrath bringeth the punishments of the sword, that ye may know there is a judgment. (Job 19:25-29).

<sup>12</sup>Nevertheless man being in honour abideth not: he is like the beasts that perish. <sup>13</sup>This their way is their folly: yet their posterity approve their sayings. Selah. <sup>14</sup>Like sheep they are laid in the grave; death shall feed on them; and the upright shall have dominion over them in the morning; and their beauty shall consume in the grave from their dwelling. <sup>15</sup>But God will redeem my soul from the power of the grave: for he shall receive me. Selah. (Psalms 49:12-15).

<sup>15</sup>Let death seize upon them, and let them go down quick into hell: for wickedness is in their dwellings, and among them. <sup>16</sup>As for me, I will call upon God; and the Lord shall save me. <sup>17</sup>Evening, and morning, and at noon, will I pray, and cry aloud: and he shall hear my voice. <sup>18</sup>He hath delivered my soul in peace from the battle that was against me: for there were many with me. <sup>19</sup>God shall hear, and afflict them, even he that abideth of old. <sup>22</sup>Cast thy burden upon the Lord, and he shall sustain thee: he shall never suffer the righteous to be moved. (Psalms 55:15-19, 22).

<sup>9</sup>For thou, Lord, art high above all the earth: thou art exalted far above all gods. <sup>10</sup>Ye that love the Lord, hate evil: he preserveth the souls of his saints; he delivereth them out of the hand of the wicked. (Psalms 97:9-10).

This eternal life is promised to those redeemed by God, those with salvation. Later in this chapter we will review the alternative of Redemption and Salvation.

## THERE IS A HEAVEN

Whether or not any of Noah's ark exists, we do not know. If there is anything remaining, it is then humanly possible to find it and prove the entire flood account using modern forensic science. After all, murders can now be solved from miniscule bits of fibers, DNA, and other matter.

What if a near-death experience (NDE) could somehow be supernaturally recorded and verified beyond any doubt? Suppose the account went like this: "I followed the bright light to an incredibly peaceful and beautiful place. My mother and father met me and took me directly to Jesus. He welcomed me but said, 'It is not your time.' I awoke in the hospital, watched the rerun of my NDE on DVD to verify its accuracy, and am happy to tell you that what you are about to see on the big screen, including the Savior's face, is real." Well of course this is not possible. We hear about NDE's but there is no consensus on the reliability of the accounts.



Since I already believe in God, Redemption, Heaven, hell, and angels, I do see “proof.” I see in nature that it had to be designed by a creator. The creation fits the Biblical account. The need for the Messiah dying for our sins follows perfectly. The Bible tells us in the preceding scripture that there is a Heaven. The Bible tells us there are angels. My own eyes told me this: The day before my father died, he, his nurse, and I were the only ones in the room. He asked me who else was there. I told him that no one else was in the room. It was obvious to me from his face, Dad saw someone at both sides of the foot-end of his bed. When he died the next day, my mother had been out of the room for a few minutes. When my mother reentered the room, she saw that Dad’s face, which had been in so much pain from his cancer, had a little smile.

The person in this world whom I trust as much as I trust myself is the one ordained by God as one flesh with me, Genesis 2:24. When my wife’s father was suffering similarly as my father, Jeanne’s observations were similar to mine. Something more astounding was that her father, who had become nearly blind by his illness, indicated by his actions and words that he saw (most likely) angels.

These accounts reveal to me that the Word is true.

## REDEMPTION

If the alternatives are eternal Heaven and eternal hell, most readers probably think it prudent to find out what to do to assure the former. Apart from what we think, what does the Bible say?

The Lord is my rock, and my fortress, and my deliverer; my God, my strength, in whom I will trust; my buckler, and the horn of my salvation, and my high tower. (Psalms 18:2).

<sup>1</sup>In thee, O Lord, do I put my trust; let me never be ashamed: deliver me in thy righteousness. <sup>2</sup>Bow down thine ear to me; deliver me speedily: be thou my strong rock, for an house of defence to save me. <sup>3</sup>For thou art my rock and my fortress; therefore for thy name's sake lead me, and guide me. <sup>4</sup>Pull me out of the net that they have laid privily for me: for thou art my strength. <sup>5</sup>Into thine hand I commit my spirit: thou hast redeemed me, O Lord God of truth. <sup>23</sup>O love the Lord, all ye his saints: for the Lord preserveth the faithful, and plentifully rewardeth the proud doer. <sup>24</sup>Be of good courage, and he shall strengthen your heart, all ye that hope in the Lord. (Psalms 31:1-5, 23-24).

<sup>20</sup>The soul that sinneth, it shall die. The son shall not bear the iniquity of the father, neither shall the father bear the iniquity of the son: the righteousness of the righteous shall be upon him, and the wickedness of the wicked shall be upon him.

<sup>21</sup>But if the wicked will turn from all his sins that he hath committed, and keep all my statutes, and do that which is lawful and right, he shall surely live, he shall not die. <sup>22</sup>All his transgressions that he hath committed, they shall not be mentioned unto him: in his righteousness that he hath done he shall live. (*What does not die mean if not live, and where would this be if not with God, and where would God be if not at His throne?*) (Ezekiel 18:20-22).

Salvation is from the Messiah alone: *But he was wounded for our transgressions, he was*

*bruised for our iniquities: the chastisement of our peace was upon him; and with his stripes we are healed. All we like sheep have gone astray; we have turned every one to his own way; and the Lord hath laid on him the iniquity of us all. (Isaiah 53:5-6). Say not thou, I will recompense evil; but wait on the Lord, and he shall save thee. (Proverbs 20:22).*

## WHERE IS GOD; WHERE IS HEAVEN

And therefore will the Lord wait, that he may be gracious unto you, and therefore will he be exalted, that he may have mercy upon you: for the Lord is a God of judgment: blessed are all they that wait for him. For the people shall dwell in Zion (*Heaven*) at Jerusalem: thou shalt weep no more: he will be very gracious unto thee at the voice of thy cry; when he shall hear it, he will answer thee. (Isaiah 30:18-19).

Be not rash with thy mouth, and let not thine heart be hasty to utter any thing before God: for God is in heaven, and thou upon earth: therefore let thy words be few. (Ecclesiastes 5:2)

For ever, O Lord, thy word is settled in heaven. (Psalms 119:89)

For as long as I can remember, I was taught and have believed that “God is everywhere.” Where is everywhere? The more thought put into this question, the more difficult “omnipresence” becomes to understand. My latest theory is that God, in spirit, is totally continuous throughout the universe, perhaps how we might perceive fog as a continuous mist, except that God is physically invisible to us. There is another exception; the fog is limited in size. Does the spirit of God extend infinitely in all directions, beyond the universe? Yes, except there is no end to the universe either. We can say words like “eternity” and “without end,” but we cannot really understand them.

If God is everywhere, and there is no end to “everywhere,” and He is in Heaven, where is Heaven? Where is the throne of God? Heaven is most likely everywhere and God’s throne is in Heaven. (Someday we will know.)

When we humans want to know where something is, our discussion is in a different dimension than talking about God and Heaven. “Q- How do you get to the Creation Museum? A- Exit onto I-75 from the Cincinnati beltway...” Directions to Heaven are different. Heaven is where God is. The throne of God is in Heaven. You get there by faith, not a map.

## SALVATION AND THE MESSIAH

We need to take another look at the Messiah because God’s redemption is to come through Him. The Messiah was the prophesied leader and deliverer of the Jews. Do you see the word “and?” The Messiah has two roles. One He has already fulfilled, the other is yet to be fulfilled.

The Jews have always been a persecuted people. It is no wonder that they were looking for the Messiah to come and deliver them from their oppressors. Well, the Messiah came. Picture yourself as a Zealot of New Testament times. Jesus comes to town and works miracles. Messiah! Messiah! Now the Zealots think the Jews are finally going to be victorious over their

oppressors as prophesied. The only problem is, this Messiah wanted to be kind to others, He went from place to place telling parables, would not fight, and then died on a cross. That is exactly what the Messiah was supposed to do. Messiah, act one, that is.

When Jesus' time on earth was over, He ascended to His rightful position in Heaven: *So then after the Lord had spoken unto them, he was received up into heaven, and sat on the right hand of God.* (Mark 16:19).

Messiah, act two, is what the Zealots wanted. This is still coming. The role is clearly defined in the book of Revelation in the New Testament and Daniel in the Old Testament. Not only will Israel's enemies be defeated, but also so will Satan. About 2000 years ago some Jews accepted this situation and became the first Christians. Others did not accept Jesus' Messiahship and have not become convinced in the time since.

The Messiah will return at the end of the Great Tribulation to rule the world. His saints will rule with Him. Make sure you are in His Army.

These scriptures refer to God ruling from Heaven:

<sup>3</sup>And there shall be no more curse: but the throne of God and of the Lamb shall be in it; and his servants shall serve him: <sup>4</sup>And they shall see his face; and his name shall be in their foreheads. (Revelation 22:3-4)

Heaven is my throne, and earth is my footstool: what house will ye build me? saith the Lord: or what is the place of my rest? (Acts 7:49)

After this manner therefore pray ye: Our Father which art in heaven, Hallowed be thy name. (Matthew 6:9)

Christians of course view the Messianic prophecies differently than Jews. Otherwise we had either all be Jews or all be Christians. (Which would it be?) Some of the Messianic prophecies speak of the Lamb who will take away the sin of the world. This is the Messiah that The Christians believe was here 2000 years ago.

Too, the prophets foretell of the victorious Messiah- the Messiah who will defeat the enemies of Jerusalem and Zion. Two thousand years ago, that is who many oppressed Jews wanted to come. I have to agree, I would like to see the Conqueror come and take no prisoners- but I am thinking beyond Israel. I am thinking Osama..., Saddam..., Mullah Omar....

So my thought on the Messiah has been that when Christ came (being in my mind the Messiah) many Jews were looking for the wrong one. God does not think the way we do. Did you notice that He created light before He created the sun?

<sup>1</sup>O Lord, thou art my God; I will exalt thee, I will praise thy name; for thou hast done wonderful things; thy counsels of old are faithfulness and truth. <sup>4</sup>For thou hast been a strength to the poor, a strength to the needy in his distress, a refuge from the storm, a shadow from the heat, when the blast of the terrible ones is as a storm against the wall. <sup>5</sup>Thou shalt bring down the noise of strangers, as the heat in a dry place; even the heat with the shadow of a cloud: the branch of the terrible ones shall be brought low. <sup>8</sup>He will swallow up death in victory; and the Lord God will wipe away tears from off all faces; and the rebuke of his people shall he take away from off all the earth: for the Lord hath spoken it. <sup>9</sup>And it shall be said in that day, Lo, this is our God; we have waited for him, and he will save us: this is the Lord; we have waited for him, we will be glad and rejoice in his salvation. (Isaiah 25:1-5, 8-9).

## HEAVEN IS PHYSICAL AND JOYOUS

In the Bible, from beginning (Genesis 28:16-17) to end (Revelation' final chapter), Heaven is referenced as the seat of God. We do not know where it is now, but we know it will be on earth someday. Perhaps Heaven or part of Heaven is on earth now, in another dimension, as the angels and departing souls cannot be seen. But no matter where Heaven is, that is where God's throne is located, and from where God rules.

Many have wondered over the ages what Heaven will be like. It will be physical and joyous, the dwelling place of God and the redeemed. The planet earth will be cleansed and like the Garden of Eden. God's throne will be in a great city, the New Jerusalem:

<sup>1</sup>I saw a new heaven and a new earth: for the first heaven and the first earth were passed away; and there was no more sea. (*Compare Isaiah 65:17 For, behold, I create new heavens and a new earth: and the former shall not be remembered, nor come into mind.*) <sup>2</sup>And I John saw the holy city, new Jerusalem, coming down from God out of heaven, <sup>3</sup>And I heard a great voice out of heaven saying, Behold, the tabernacle of God is with men, and he will dwell with them, and they shall be his people, and God himself shall be with them, and be their God. <sup>4</sup>And God shall wipe away all tears from their eyes; and there shall be no more death, neither sorrow, nor crying, neither shall there be any more pain: for the former things are passed away. <sup>5</sup>And he that sat upon the throne said, Behold, I make all things new. And he said unto me, Write: for these words are true and faithful. <sup>6</sup>And he said unto me, It is done. I am Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the end. I will give unto him that is athirst of the fountain of the water of life freely. <sup>7</sup>He that overcometh shall inherit all things; and I will be his God, and he shall be my son. <sup>8</sup>But the unbelieving shall have their part in the lake which burneth with fire and brimstone: which is the second death. <sup>9</sup>And there came unto me one of the seven angels saying, Come hither, I will shew thee the Lamb's wife. <sup>10</sup>And he carried me away in the spirit to a great and high mountain, and shewed me that great city, the holy Jerusalem, descending out of heaven from God, <sup>11</sup>Having the glory of God: and her light was like unto a stone most precious, even like a jasper stone, clear as crystal; <sup>12</sup>And had a wall great and high, and had twelve gates, and at the gates twelve angels, and names written thereon, which are the names of the twelve tribes of Israel: <sup>14</sup>And the wall of the city had twelve foundations, and in them the names of the twelve apostles of the Lamb. <sup>16</sup>And he measured the city with the reed, twelve thousand furlongs. The length and the breadth and the height of it are equal. <sup>17</sup>And he measured the wall thereof, an hundred and forty and four cubits, according to the measure of a man, that is, of the angel. <sup>18</sup>And the building of the wall of it was of jasper: and the city was pure gold, like unto clear glass. <sup>19</sup>And the foundations of the wall of the city were garnished with precious stones. The first foundation was jasper; the second, sapphire; the third, chalcedony; the fourth, emerald; <sup>20</sup>The fifth, sardonyx; the sixth, sardius; the seventh, chrysolite; the eighth, beryl; the ninth, topaz; the tenth, chrysoprasus; the eleventh, jacinth; the twelfth, amethyst. <sup>21</sup>And the twelve gates were twelve pearls: every gate was of one pearl: and the street of the city was pure gold, as it were transparent glass. <sup>22</sup>And I saw no temple therein: for the Lord God Almighty and the Lamb are the temple of it. <sup>23</sup>And the city had no need of the sun, neither of the moon, to shine in it: for the glory of God did lighten it, and the Lamb is the light thereof. <sup>24</sup>And the nations of them which are saved shall walk in the light of it: and the kings of the earth do bring their glory and honour into it. <sup>25</sup>And the gates of it shall not be shut at all by day: for there shall be no night there. <sup>26</sup>And they shall bring the glory and honour of the nations into it. <sup>27</sup>And there shall in no wise enter into it any thing that defileth, neither whatsoever worketh abomination, or maketh a lie: but they which are written in the Lamb's book of life. <sup>1</sup>And he shewed me a pure river of water of life, clear as crystal, proceeding out of the throne of God and of the Lamb. <sup>2</sup>In the midst of the street of it, and on either side of the river, was there the tree of life, which bare twelve manner of fruits, and

yielded her fruit every month: and the leaves of the tree were for the healing of the nations. <sup>3</sup>And there shall be no more curse: but the throne of God and of the Lamb shall be in it; and his servants shall serve him: <sup>4</sup>And they shall see his face; and his name shall be in their foreheads. <sup>5</sup>And there shall be no night there; and they need no candle, neither light of the sun; for the Lord God giveth them light: and they shall reign for ever and ever. <sup>20</sup>He which testifieth these things saith, Surely I come quickly. Amen. Even so, come, Lord Jesus. (Condensed from Revelation 21:1-27, 22:1-5,20)

I am not sure what most of those gemstones look like, but the New Jerusalem sounds beautiful. Being such a nature lover, I imagine I would enjoy some time outside of the city among the trees and other lush vegetation. I will not need to worry about poison ivy for the first ever (and for ever) and there will be no weeds, mosquitoes, and all of the other annoyances brought into this world by sin. Of course how wonderful to return to the city illuminated by the presence of God.

Heaven is definitely described as a physical place in the Revelation account. There is no symbolism here. Jesus spoke of preparing places for us.

In my Father's house are many mansions: if it were not so, I would have told you. I go to prepare a place for you. And if I go and prepare a place for you, I will come again, and receive you unto myself; that where I am, there ye may be also. And whither I go ye know, and the way ye know. Thomas saith unto him, Lord, we know not whither thou goest; and how can we know the way? Jesus saith unto him, I am the way, the truth, and the life: no man cometh unto the Father, but by me. (John 14:2-6)

## A GRAND PROMISE- NEW BODIES

What good would life after death be if we got another feeble body, were destined to live again in sickness and destruction, and yet another death? That is not the way God is playing it out. The redeemed will have new, physical, incorruptible bodies, which would only be necessary in a physical place:

<sup>35</sup>But some man will say, How are the dead raised up? And with what body do they come? <sup>36</sup>Thou fool, that which thou sowest is not quickened, except it die: <sup>37</sup>And that which thou sowest, thou sowest not that body that shall be, but bare grain, it may chance of wheat, or of some other grain: <sup>38</sup>But God giveth it a body as it hath pleased him, and to every seed his own body. <sup>39</sup>All flesh is not the same flesh: but there is one kind of flesh of men, another flesh of beasts, another of fishes, and another of birds. <sup>40</sup>There are also celestial bodies, and bodies terrestrial: but the glory of the celestial is one, and the glory of the terrestrial is another. <sup>41</sup>There is one glory of the sun, and another glory of the moon, and another glory of the stars: for one star differeth from another star in glory. <sup>42</sup>So also is the resurrection of the dead. It is sown in corruption; it is raised in incorruption: <sup>43</sup>It is sown in dishonour; it is raised in glory: it is sown in weakness; it is raised in power: <sup>44</sup>It is sown a natural body; it is raised a spiritual body. There is a natural body, and there is a spiritual body. <sup>45</sup>And so it is written, The first man Adam was made a living soul; the last Adam was made a quickening spirit. <sup>46</sup>Howbeit that was not first which is spiritual, but that which is natural; and afterward that which is spiritual. <sup>47</sup>The first man is of the earth, earthy: the second man is the Lord from heaven. <sup>48</sup>As is the earthy, such are they also that are earthy: and as is the heavenly, such are they also that are heavenly. <sup>49</sup>And as we have borne the image of the earthy, we shall also bear the image of the heavenly.

<sup>50</sup>Now this I say, brethren, that flesh and blood cannot inherit the kingdom of God; neither doth corruption inherit incorruption. <sup>51</sup>Behold, I shew you a mystery; We shall not all sleep, but we shall all be changed, <sup>52</sup>In a moment, in the twinkling of an eye, at the last trump: for the trumpet shall sound, and the dead shall be raised incorruptible, and we shall be changed. <sup>53</sup>For this corruptible must put on incorruption, and this mortal must put on immortality. <sup>54</sup>So when this corruptible shall have put on incorruption, and this mortal shall have put on immortality, then shall be brought to pass the saying that is written, Death is swallowed up in victory. <sup>55</sup>O death, where is thy sting? O grave, where is thy victory? <sup>56</sup>The sting of death is sin; and the strength of sin is the law. <sup>57</sup>But thanks be to God, which giveth us the victory through our Lord Jesus Christ. (1 Corinthians 15:35-57)

Can we complain about aches and pains on earth that are but the blink of an eye of eternity?

<sup>23</sup>For you have a new life. It was not passed on to you from your parents, for the life they gave you will fade away. This new one will last forever, for it comes from Christ, God's ever-living Message to men. <sup>24</sup>Yes, our natural lives will fade as grass does when it becomes all brown and dry. All our greatness is like a flower that droops and falls; <sup>25</sup>but the Word of the Lord will last forever. And his message is the Good News that was preached to you. (1 Peter 1:23-25 Living Bible)

My father kept a diary. On May 17, 1992, he entered, "When I leave this earth, don't mourn for me- be prepared to join me at the end of your (life)." This was written before his first bout with cancer. In 1996, Dad began the first of three successive years of fighting cancer. The chemotherapy and other treatments were painful and a lot to bear for a 75 year-old man. Dad was looking forward to his new, incorruptible body as he endured these treatments. Here are the thoughts of a man knowing what God had waiting for him:

- April 24, 1996. "I can't do much work anymore. To anyone reading this, put your trust in Jesus Christ and come see me and my new body."
- May 6, 1996. "I am a coward, even though I know that for me to die is gain. I am so glad I love Jesus. I'm so glad He loves me."
- December 18, 1996. "I'm not very confident of my condition. I just have to repeat, I'm so glad there is a Heaven that we are promised."
- March 7, 1997. "Another not so hot day. Things are sure to get better for me someday."

We who know Jesus as our Savior can take comfort in the same promises. Do you want a new, incorruptible body someday? My Dad joined Jesus in Heaven on July 25, 1998.

What joy to never have illness again! Think of all you have suffered so far on this earth. It will not happen in Heaven. Are there any diseases you do not dread, cancer, diabetes, heart disease, and so on? There is no *fear* of disease in Heaven. There will be much other joy:

Thou wilt shew me the path of life: in thy presence is fulness of joy; at thy right hand there are pleasures for evermore. (Psalms 16:11)

Rejoice, and be exceeding glad: for great is your reward in heaven: for so persecuted they the prophets which were before you. (Matthew 5:12)

Do you like to sing? The inheritors of Heaven will sing the most beautiful, joyous music ever, forever. Imagine the joy of being reunited with loved ones. I am so anxious to see Dad. My wife has a twin sister that died a few days after birth. Yet this all pales to being in the midst of the glory of God. I cannot imagine anyone wanting to miss this.

## WHO MAY ENTER INTO HEAVEN

We are destined to die only once because of sin, if we accept Christ as Savior.

<sup>24a</sup>How long dost thou make us to doubt? If thou be the Christ, tell us plainly.  
<sup>25</sup>Jesus answered them, I told you, and ye believed not: the works that I do in my Father's name, they bear witness of me. <sup>26</sup>But ye believe not, because ye are not of my sheep, as I said unto you. <sup>27</sup>My sheep hear my voice, and I know them, and they follow me: <sup>28</sup>And I give unto them eternal life; and they shall never perish, neither shall any man pluck them out of my hand. <sup>29</sup>My Father, which gave them me, is greater than all; and no man is able to pluck them out of my Father's hand.  
<sup>30</sup>I and my Father are one. (John 10:24b-30)

He that hath an ear, let him hear what the Spirit saith unto the churches; To him that overcometh will I give to eat of the tree of life, which is in the midst of the paradise of God. (Revelation 2:7)

I would like to say, "Everyone wants to go to Heaven." It does not seem that way at all. Many hear the way, but do not heed the way. Jesus said, *I am the Way, the Truth, and the Life. No man cometh unto the Father, but by me.* (John 14:6.) That is pretty plain language for what it would take me pages (or a book) to say, but many who hear this cannot accept it. Nowhere does the Bible tell us to figure out our own way, or earn salvation on our own. There is only His way.

## HEAVEN IS NOT OPEN TO EVERYONE (But it can be)

We spend a lot of time looking at scripture telling us how to find salvation and how to get to Heaven. We do not spend enough time on the "how not to."

<sup>10</sup>And they that know thy name will put their trust in thee: for thou, Lord, hast not forsaken them that seek thee. <sup>11</sup>Sing praises to the Lord, which dwelleth in Zion: declare among the people his doings. <sup>12</sup>When he maketh inquisition for blood, he remembereth them: he forgetteth not the cry of the humble. <sup>13</sup>Have mercy upon me, O Lord; consider my trouble which I suffer of them that hate me, thou that liftest me up from the gates of death: <sup>14</sup>That I may shew forth all thy praise in the gates of the daughter of Zion: I will rejoice in thy salvation. <sup>15</sup>The heathen are sunk down in the pit that they made: in the net which they hid is their own foot taken. <sup>16</sup>The Lord is known by the judgment which he executeth: the wicked is snared in the work of his own hands. Higgaion. Selah. <sup>17</sup>The wicked shall be turned into hell, and all the nations that forget God. (Psalms 9:10-17).

And thou, Solomon my son, know thou the God of thy father, and serve him with

a perfect heart and with a willing mind: for the Lord searcheth all hearts, and understandeth all the imaginations of the thoughts: if thou seek him, he will be found of thee; but if thou forsake him, he will cast thee off for ever. (1 Chronicles 28:9).

<sup>39</sup>And one of the malefactors which were hanged railed on him, saying, If thou be Christ, save thyself and us. <sup>40</sup>But the other answering rebuked him, saying, Dost not thou fear God, seeing thou art in the same condemnation? <sup>41</sup>And we indeed justly; for we receive the due reward of our deeds: but this man hath done nothing amiss. <sup>42</sup>And he said unto Jesus, Lord, remember me when thou comest into thy kingdom. <sup>43</sup>And Jesus said unto him, Verily I say unto thee, To day shalt thou be with me in paradise. (Luke 23:39-43)

In this latter passage, the first thief was getting the punishment he deserved on the cross as determined by the law of that day. There was an innocent man on the cross in the middle, and another deserving person on the third cross. The first man was either ridiculing Jesus, or ridiculing him and hoping for help from death without a supernatural redemption. The latter knew that the two criminals were getting what they deserved, but realized who Jesus was. The first man did not enter Heaven. Do you see that the first man was rebuked not by Christ, but by another man? Jesus will not know this man at Judgment:

<sup>21</sup>Not every one that saith unto me, Lord, Lord, shall enter into the kingdom of heaven; but he that doeth the will of my Father which is in heaven. <sup>22</sup>Many will say to me in that day, Lord, Lord, have we not prophesied in thy name? and in thy name have cast out devils? and in thy name done many wonderful works? <sup>23</sup>And then will I profess unto them, I never knew you: depart from me, ye that work iniquity. (Matthew 7:21-23)

Works will not get anyone into Heaven.

<sup>24</sup>Strive to enter in at the strait gate: for many, I say unto you, will seek to enter in, and shall not be able. <sup>25</sup>When once the master of the house is risen up, and hath shut the door, and ye begin to stand without, and to knock at the door, saying, Lord, Lord, open unto us; and he shall answer and say unto you, I know you not whence ye are: <sup>26</sup>Then shall ye begin to say, We have eaten and drunk in thy presence, and thou hast taught in our streets. <sup>27</sup>But he shall say, I tell you, I know you not whence ye are; depart from me, all ye workers of iniquity. <sup>28</sup>There shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth, when ye shall see Abraham, and Isaac, and Jacob, and all the prophets, in the kingdom of God, and you yourselves thrust out. (Luke 13:24-28)

Many churchgoers hear but do not hear, and believe in strange requirements for getting into Heaven. "I have always done my best; I give to the poor every Christmas; I give to missions; I think God wants us just to believe 'something' and to be kind to others." My personal belief is that some of these people are those described in Luke 13:24.



## IS THERE A LITERAL HELL?

Hell is real, and it is the destination of all not redeemed by God. Since God has offered salvation through the Messiah, it is unnecessary for anyone to go there, even though on our own merits hell is what we deserve. Hear the word of the Lord.

Let death seize upon them, and let them go down quick into hell: for wickedness is in their dwellings, and among them. (Psalms 55:15)

I made the nations to shake at the sound of his fall, when I cast him down to hell with them that descend into the pit: and all the trees of Eden, the choice and best of Lebanon, all that drink water, shall be comforted in the nether parts of the earth. (Ezekiel 31:16)

But I say unto you, That whosoever is angry with his brother without a cause shall be in danger of the judgment: and whosoever shall (call his brother worthless) shall be in danger of the council: but whosoever shall say, Thou fool, shall be in danger of hell fire. (Matthew 5:22)

And if thy right hand offend thee, cut it off, and cast it from thee: for it is profitable for thee that one of thy members should perish, and not that thy whole body should be cast into hell. (Matthew 5:30)

Hell is referenced as literally as Heaven. As sure as I am that there is a Heaven, I am that sure there is a hell. Hell is described as a place of great suffering. A place of anguish, darkness, worms, fire, and punishment. Satan will be there, how nice could it be? Why would anyone want to go there?

Have you ever heard a group of guys say, “Well, if we go to hell, at least we’ll be together.” I would not count on being together. Do you think Satan would let you have fun, anyway? Of course I doubt if Satan will have any power in hell, certainly not the power to get out.

Would God send people He loves to hell? The Bible says He loves all of us. The Bible also says that there is only one way to eternal life. Further, those that do not go to Heaven go to hell. Do not plan to get into Heaven just because God is a God of love. Do you see the word “just” in the previous sentence? That is why God will send people to hell, because He is Just.

And the sea gave up the dead which were in it; and death and hell delivered up the dead which were in them: and they were judged every man according to their works. And death and hell were cast into the lake of fire. This is the second death. (Revelation 20:13-14)

I have pondered over an eternal lake of fire for as long as I can remember. I have deliberated over Revelation 20:14 for a long time as well. Wishful thinking on my part is that when hell is thrown into the lake of fire, the souls of those in suffering vaporize and they are no more rather than suffer eternal torment. I would not count on that, either.

WITNESS OF THE HOLY ANGELS

But of that day and that hour knoweth no man, no, not the angels which are in

heaven, neither the Son, but the Father. (Mark 13:32)

Billy Graham's books on angels are well known works that offer much comfort to their Bible-believing readers. We enjoy reading about angels protecting us and ministering to us, as they did with baby Jesus and the resurrected Redeemer. We like to discuss instances such as my belief that my father saw angels that were to take him home to be with the Lord. The more hawkish of us perhaps are interested in the angel's roles in fighting evil. But another important point about angels is what we read about them outside the Bible can provide additional proof of Heaven and of eternal life. What are some of the angels' duties?

**They guard us:** For he shall give his angels charge over thee, to keep thee in all thy ways. They shall bear thee up in their hands, lest thou dash thy foot against a stone. (Psalms 91:11-12).

**They are mighty, they do not bring judgment:** Whereas angels, which are greater in power and might, bring not railing accusation against them before the Lord. (2 Peter 2:11).

**Angels watch us:** For I think that God hath set forth us the apostles last, as it were appointed to death: for we are made a spectacle unto the world, and to angels, and to men. (1 Corinthians 4:9).

**The angels from Heaven watched over Jesus:** (Jesus, praying in the Garden of Gethsemane) Saying, Father, if thou be willing, remove this cup from me (betrayal by Judas): nevertheless not my will, but thine, be done. And there appeared an angel unto him from heaven, strengthening him. (Luke 22:42-43).

**The angel at the tomb of the resurrection:** And, behold, there was a great earthquake: for the angel of the Lord descended from heaven, and came and rolled back the stone from the door, and sat upon it. His countenance was like lightning, and his raiment white as snow: And for fear of him the keepers did shake, and became as dead men. (Matthew 28:2-4).

The angels are another tie between God, man, Heaven, earth, and eternity.

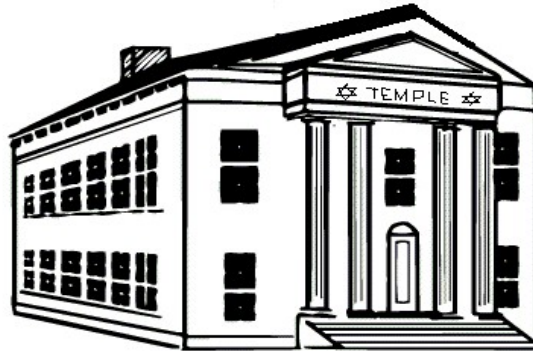
## HOW DO YOU GET INTO HEAVEN?

If you do not want to take your chances with hell, "the lake of fire," take these paragraphs seriously. We are all going to die. Make sure your reservation is made in Heaven. When you "call" to place your reservation, you are seeking redemption by the sacrifice of blood shed by the Messiah. Enter into prayer, worded such as the following:

*Dear God, I am a sinner. I am sorry for my sin and want to turn away from sin and toward you. I receive the Messiah Jesus Christ as my Savior and the Lord of my life. I will follow Him from now on. Please guide me in my Christian life. I pray this in Jesus Holy name. Amen."*



## Chapter 12. Should Churches Keep up With the Times?



<sup>89</sup>For ever, O Lord, thy word is settled in heaven. <sup>90</sup>Thy faithfulness is unto all generations: thou hast established the earth, and it abideth. <sup>160</sup>Thy word is true from the beginning: and every one of thy righteous judgments endureth for ever.  
(Psalms 119:89, 90, 160)

### GOD DOES NOT CHANGE: HOW CAN WE?

God's word is true from the beginning. God is omniscient. He is infallible. (He cannot be wrong.) His righteous judgments endure forever. Therefore, what He said in the beginning is still true today. The rules have not changed. The Church has no authority to change what God has cast in stone, nor does any man.

No; I, Yahweh, do not change; and you have not ceased to be children of Jacob! (Malachi 3:6 NJB).

For the mountains may depart, and the hills be removed; but my lovingkindness shall not depart from thee, neither shall my covenant of peace be removed, saith Jehovah that hath mercy on thee. (Isaiah 54:10 ASV).

Blessed be the Lord who has given rest to his people Israel, according to all that he promised; not one word has failed of all his good promise, which he uttered by Moses his servant. (1 Kings 8:56 RSV).

He hath remembered his covenant for ever, the word which he commanded to a thousand generations. (Psalms 105:8).

(For the Lord thy God is a merciful God;) he will not forsake thee, neither destroy thee, nor forget the covenant of thy fathers which he swore unto them. (Deuteronomy 4:31).

## GOD IS ABSOLUTE

There was no beginning with God, only with man and the rest of creation. Truth always was what it was and was what it is. It is man who tries to change it, not God. As God established all of the laws of nature that rule matter, He alone establishes the spiritual judgments that endure forever.

There is none like thee among the gods, O Lord, nor are there any works like thine. All the nations thou hast made shall come and bow down before thee, O Lord, and shall glorify thy name. For thou art great and doest wondrous things, thou alone art God. (Psalms 86:8-10 RSV).

Thus saith the Lord the King of Israel, and his redeemer the Lord of hosts; I am the first, and I am the last; and beside me there is no God. (Isaiah 44:6).

Let not thine heart envy sinners: but be thou in the fear of the Lord all the day long. For surely there is an end; and thine expectation shall not be cut off. Proverbs 23:17-18).

In that I command thee this day to love the Lord thy God, to walk in his ways, and to keep his commandments and his statutes and his judgments, that thou mayest live and multiply: and the Lord thy God shall bless thee in the land whither thou goest to possess it. (Deuteronomy 30:16).

## GOD'S PURPOSE

Our world is decaying due to our fallible nature and our willingness to be deceived by our adversary, Satan. We want to believe what we want to believe, even when we know it is wrong. Why are we so set on living for the world rather than living for God? We find a clue when we look at the first deception.

God's purpose for His plan was to provide a means of redemption for us. By the way, just what is in this for Him? God created, we rebelled; God destroyed, we rebelled again, and; then he promised a Savior to save us, not to save Himself.

Many are the plans in the mind of a man, but it is the purpose of the Lord that will be established. (Proverbs 19:21 RSV).

Daniel answered and said, Blessed be the name of God for ever and ever: for wisdom and might are his: And he changeth the times and the seasons: he removeth kings, and setteth up kings: he giveth wisdom unto the wise, and knowledge to them that know understanding: He revealeth the deep and secret things: he knoweth what is in the darkness, and the light dwelleth with him. (Daniel 2:20-22).

## SATAN'S DECEPTION & FIRST SIN

Satan did not go to Eve and just outright suggest that she go against God. Instead, Satan tried to confuse issues, raise doubts, and teach rationalization. Look at what Satan says:

- *Now the serpent was more subtil than any beast of the field which the Lord God had made. And he said unto the woman, Yea, hath God said, Ye shall not eat of every tree of*

*the garden?* (Genesis 3:1). Satan cast doubt; did God really say that?

- Eve replied to Satan that she and Adam could not eat of the tree in the midst of the garden or they would die. *And the serpent said unto the woman, Ye shall not surely die:* (Genesis 3:4). Doubt, again. You will not die. God did not say that, He did not mean that.
- Satan continues, *For God doth know that in the day ye eat thereof, then your eyes shall be opened, and ye shall be as gods, knowing good and evil.* (Genesis 3:5). God did not mean it because He does not want you to be as smart as He. God is a liar.

That is Satan's method. Did God say that? Did He mean that? It is not true. It is not true today. God is a liar.

## WHY DOES THE CHURCH CHANGE?

My favorite example of change in a church occurred in the Mormon Church. I am told that the U.S. government was about to come down on the Mormon's for allowing and encouraging polygamy, in the twentieth century. When things were about to get rough legally, the Mormon elders suddenly received a "divine revelation" that they should no longer allow polygamy (it still goes on with some members). The other incident was that the Mormons would not allow black ministers. The government did not look kindly on racism within the church any more than plural marriages. Another timely revelation saved the day again. I wonder if these are known as the "big" revelations; bigotry and bigamy?

The only reason the church changes is for reasons of flesh.

## MAN'S SELF-RIGHTEOUSNESS

Forgetting cults- let us talk about real churches, that is, Judeo-Christian churches. What is our excuse for changing the rules? When we change the rules (we say it is "the church") it is man deciding for God. God gave us neither the ability nor the authority to change His rules. How pious are we?

Thinkest thou this to be right, that thou saidst, My righteousness is more than God's? (Job 35:2).

Woe to those who think themselves wise and believe themselves enlightened. (Isaiah 5:21 NJB).

He that is of a proud heart stirreth up strife: but he that putteth his trust in the Lord shall be made fat. He that trusteth in his own heart is a fool: but whoso walketh wisely, he shall be delivered. (Proverbs 28:25-26).

The Catholic Church has adopted the infallibility of the Pope, but that is non-scriptural. When man decides, man is playing God. That is dangerous- man cannot save himself. Does man deciding sound like this: *And he said unto the woman, Yea, hath God said, Ye shall not eat of every tree of the garden?* (Genesis 3:1). *And the serpent said unto the woman, Ye shall not surely die: For God doth know that in the day ye eat thereof, then your eyes shall be opened, and*

*ye shall be as gods, knowing good and evil.* (Genesis 3:4-5).

Do you remember how much trouble we got into the last time we thought for ourselves? God did give us free will, but our choices amount to His way or the wrong way.

## THE ECUMENICAL MOVEMENT

“We just want to get along, to be tolerant. It does not matter what you believe. Just, love your fellow man. Do it your way.”

Ecumenicity is watered down religion barely worth practicing. The message is anything goes but God. Tolerance includes lenience for sin and sinful acts. The ecumenical church is the Church in Laodicea from Revelation chapter 3. Christ said in that passage, “Because you are lukewarm, I will spew thee out of my mouth.” This is not a good example of why the Church should keep up with the times.

## ENDORSEMENT OF SEXUAL SIN

Chapter 8 lists the Biblical reasons as to why homosexuality is against God’s word, and chapter 9 other sexual sin and lust. Yes, we should love all church members and openly welcome any sinner to come to our churches; but, we should encourage them to seek an end to their sin. We should certainly not endorse out-of-wedlock lifestyles.

Today’s church is wrong in showing “tolerance” and endorsing, for example, of gay relationships or other issues contrary to Biblical law. We should consider sinful lifestyles when we ordain clergy. I do not care what the Equal Rights Amendment has to say on this subject because I am referring to higher law. An immoral minister makes no sense and is certainly not a reason why the Church should keep up with the times.

## DIVORCE AND THE CHURCH

A logical step after using the example of an immoral minister above is to discuss the real life example we have in my neighborhood. We have a pastor of a mainline Protestant church that was committing adultery. He eventually divorced his wife, married his adulteress, and continues to pastor a congregation. Another example of why the Church should not keep up with the times.

## MODERN SCIENCE AND THE CHURCH

I pray that chapters 1 through 3 gave you enough information to draw the conclusion that science has not proved evolution. Scientists deserve credit for the facts they found that point toward special creation. The Church has fallen into Satan’s trap of not believing God, just as Eve did. We think we have to compromise with science either because science is right about evolution (a lie) or because we do not want to look dumb to the world. Instead we look dumb to God. We look dumb to Satan, too. He loves our gullibility. Evolution is not a good reason to keep up with the times.

## SEPARATION OF CHURCH AND STATE

The first settlers came to America to avoid religious persecution by the government. Today, guess what we have- religious persecution by the government, a government that is “one nation, under God” with the motto, “In God We Trust.” We cannot pray in school. If we are to have true separation, then the government should not have a right to interfere with the inner church. ERA should not tell us that we must have homosexual ministers, for example. Today’s governments are “keeping up with the times,” that is, reacting to the minority. Government edicts on what our churches should do are not a reason for the Church to keep up with the times.

## CONCLUSION

I know of no reason why the Church should keep up with the times. What changed since the beginning? We know that the ecumenical church is inevitable. It will be the church of the Tribulation, *Babylon the Great, The Mother of Harlots and Abominations of the Earth* (Revelation 17:5). Satan will allow this church to be *the* church, essentially a dead church. However, the ecumenical church will be destroyed 42 months into the Tribulation, which is the start of the Great Tribulation. *And (the angel) cried mightily with a strong voice, saying, Babylon the great is fallen, is fallen, and is become the habitation of devils, and the hold of every foul spirit, and a cage of every unclean and hateful bird.* (Revelation 18:2).

Keeping up with the times nowadays is in effect the ecumenical movement. This “communion” of churches weakens *the* Church. This is another strike against the Church keeping up with the times.



## Chapter 13. The Covenant and Promises



For the children of Israel walked forty years in the wilderness, till all the people that were men of war, which came out of Egypt, were consumed, because they obeyed not the voice of the Lord: unto whom the Lord sware that he would not shew them the land, which the Lord sware unto their fathers that he would give us, a land that floweth with milk and honey. (Joshua 5:6).

Do you know how difficult it is to be the class clown? So much is expected of you. It is no different than being the brightest student in the class or the teacher's pet. The class clown is expected to snap clever witticisms or perform perfect off-the-cuff buffoonery. If he falls short of anticipations it is a failure.

The same is true of the brightest student in the class. Perfection is the projection. I remember in a particular class I was required to do many special reports that included standing before the class and making oral reports. I felt singled out and asked to do an unfair amount of extra work. I convinced my father to call the teacher at his home. The teacher explained that I was selected because of my capabilities, that I did a good job with these reports, and that the extra work was to help me grow.

Does that sound like the Israelites? Was more required of God's people than their heathen oppressors?

### CHOSEN PEOPLE

Blessed is the nation whose God is the Lord; and the people whom he hath chosen for his own inheritance. (Psalms 33:12).

Israel's faith rests on the conviction that there is one God, creator of the universe,



unknowable in Himself, revealed to Abraham and his descendants. God's acts are perceived, by faith, by those to whom He gives understanding.

Abraham founded the nation of Israel, as recounted in the Hebrew Bible (Old Testament). This nation loved God, and God formed a covenant with them. The Israelites moved to Egypt, where they were eventually enslaved. After more than 400 years they were freed from Egyptian bondage under the leadership of Moses and led to Canaan (Palestine). During this exodus, God renewed His covenant with Israel, and would do so again in later centuries.

Wherefore it shall come to pass, if ye hearken to these judgments, and keep, and do them, that the Lord thy God shall keep unto thee the covenant and the mercy which he sware unto thy fathers: (Deuteronomy 7:12).

Keep therefore the words of this covenant, and do them, that ye may prosper in all that ye do. Ye stand this day all of you before the Lord your God; your captains of your tribes, your elders, and your officers, with all the men of Israel, Your little ones, your wives, and thy stranger that is in thy camp, from the hewer of thy wood unto the drawer of thy water: That thou shouldest enter into covenant with the Lord thy God, and into his oath, which the Lord thy God maketh with thee this day: That he may establish thee to day for a people unto himself, and that he may be unto thee a God, as he hath said unto thee, and as he hath sworn unto thy fathers, to Abraham, to Isaac, and to Jacob. Neither with you only do I make this covenant and this oath; But with him that standeth here with us this day before the Lord our God, and also with him that is not here with us this day: (Deuteronomy 29:9-15).

The following verse might seem mundane, but it is the first time the Israelites were called "Jews:"

At that time Rezin king of Syria recovered Elath to Syria, and drave the Jews from Elath: and the Syrians came to Elath, and dwelt there unto this day. (2 Kings 16:6).

Over the next several centuries after establishing a nation in Canaan, God led Israel to become powerful under its first three kings--Saul, David, and Solomon.

## COVENANT WITH GOD

The arrangement God made with Israel is called a covenant. It was first stated to Abraham about 2000 BC in Mesopotamia:

The Lord said to Abraham, Leave your own country, your kinsmen, and your father's house, and go to a country that I will show you. I will make you into a great nation. (From Deuteronomy 7:6):

*THE EXODUS & COVENANT:* The Israelis arrived in the Sinai peninsula three months after the night of their departure from Egypt. After breaking camp, they came to the base of Mt. Sinai and set up camp there. Moses climbed the rugged mountain to meet with God, and from somewhere in the mountain God called to him and said, "Give these instructions to the people

of Israel. Tell them you have seen what I did to the Egyptians, and how I brought you to myself. If you will obey me and keep your part of my contract with you, you shall be my own little flock from among all the nations of the earth; for all the earth is mine. And you shall be a kingdom of priests to God, a holy nation."

Moses returned from the mountain and called together the leaders of the people and told them what the Lord had said. They all responded in unison, We will certainly do everything he asks of us. Moses reported the words of the people to the Lord. Then he said to Moses, I am going to come to you in the form of a dark cloud, so that the people themselves can hear me when I talk with you, and then they will always believe you.

Go down now and see that the people are ready for my visit. Sanctify them today and tomorrow, and have them wash their clothes. Then, the day after tomorrow, I will come down upon Mt. Sinai as all the people watch. Set boundary lines and tell them, Do not go up into the mountain, or even touch its boundaries; whoever does shall die. Stay away from the mountain entirely until you hear a ram's horn sounding one long blast; then gather at the foot of the mountain!

So Moses went down to the people and sanctified them. He told them, Get ready for God's appearance two days from now. On the morning of the third day there was a terrific thunder and lightning storm, and a huge cloud came down upon the mountain, and there was a long, loud blast as from a ram's horn; and all the people trembled. Moses led them out from the camp to meet God, and they stood at the foot of the mountain. All Mt. Sinai was covered with smoke because Jehovah descended upon it in the form of fire; the smoke billowed into the sky as from a furnace, and the whole mountain shook with a violent earthquake.

So the Lord came down upon the top of Mt. Sinai and called Moses up to the top of the mountain, and Moses ascended to God. But the Lord told Moses, Go back down and warn the people not to cross the boundaries. They must not come up here to try to see God, for if they do, many of them will die. Even the priests on duty must sanctify themselves, or else I will destroy them.

But the people won't come up into the mountain! Moses protested. You told them not to! You told me to set boundaries around the mountain, and to declare it off limits because it is reserved for God.

But Jehovah said, Go down, and bring Aaron back with you, and don't let the priests and the people break across the boundaries to try to come up here, or I will punish them. So Moses went down to the people and told them what God had said. Then God issued this edict:

- I am Jehovah your God who liberated you from your slavery in Egypt. You may worship no other god than me.
- You shall not make yourselves any idols: no images of animals, birds, or fish.
- You must never bow or worship it in any way; for I, the Lord your God, am very possessive. I will not share your affection with any other god! And when I punish people for their sins, the punishment continues upon the children, grandchildren, and great-grandchildren of those who hate me; but,
- I lavish my love upon thousands of those who love me and obey my commandments.
- You shall not use the name of Jehovah your God irreverently, nor use it to swear to a falsehood. You will not escape punishment if you do.
- Remember to observe the Sabbath as a holy day.

- Six days a week are for your daily duties and your regular work, but the seventh day is a day of Sabbath rest before the Lord your God. On that day you are to do no work of any kind, nor shall your son, daughter, or slaves--whether men or women--or your cattle or your house guests. For in six days the Lord made the heaven, earth, and sea, and everything in them, and rested the seventh day; so he blessed the Sabbath day and set it aside for rest.
- Honor your father and mother, that you may have a long, good life in the land the Lord your God will give you.
- You must not murder.
- You must not commit adultery.
- You must not steal.
- You must not lie.
- You must not be envious of your neighbor's house, or want to sleep with his wife, or want to own his slaves, oxen, donkeys, or anything else he has.

All the people saw the lightning and the smoke billowing from the mountain, and heard the thunder and the long, frightening trumpet blast; and they stood at a distance, shaking with fear. They said to Moses, You tell us what God says and we will obey, but don't let God speak directly to us, or it will kill us. Don't be afraid, Moses told them, for God has come in this way to show you his awesome power, so that from now on you will be afraid to sin against him!

As the people stood in the distance, Moses entered into the deep darkness where God was. And the Lord told Moses to be his spokesman to the people of Israel. You are witnesses to the fact that I have made known my will to you from heaven. Remember, you must not make or worship idols made of silver or gold or of anything else! The altars you make for me must be simple altars of earth. Offer upon them your sacrifices to me--your burnt offerings and peace offerings of sheep and oxen. Build altars only where I tell you to, and I will come and bless you there. (From Exodus 19, 20 LVB).

The obedience of Abraham was dependent upon God's fulfilling His promise. This covenant has been renewed by God, always with the condition that the nation be obedient to His commands.

After the escape from Egypt, God restated the covenant. "These commandments, statutes, and laws" find their fullest expression in the Torah. After Moses had led Israel out of Egypt, the people formed themselves into a nation. He became their lawgiver. According to the book of Exodus, Moses received the Ten Commandments, the basic moral law, directly from God on Mount Sinai.

God's promises were specific. He promised to make Israel a great nation with a land of its own, and to a time when Israel would draw all nations together in a worldwide community under God's law.

## GOD PROMISES TO MEET OUR NEEDS

Therefore I say unto you, What things soever ye desire, when ye pray, believe that ye receive them, and ye shall have them. (Mark 11:24)

<sup>14</sup>And this is the confidence that we have in him, if we ask any thing according to his will, he heareth us: <sup>15</sup>And if we know that he hear us, whatsoever we ask, we know that we have the petitions that we desired of him. (1 John 5:14-15)

God is supposed to hear our prayers and answer our prayers. He promises to do so in the scriptures. He certainly does hear our prayers (He knows what we are thinking when we aren't praying). He also answers every prayer. Sometimes He says, "Yes," sometimes "No," and sometimes, "Later." In other words, He answers all of our prayers; just not necessarily with the answer we want to hear. Do you remember when Solomon said, "Divide the living child in two, and give half to the one, and half to the other?" (1 Kings 3:25.) This is a human example of an answer being "good" for one and "bad" for another.

My adult son and daughter have told me that they now understand the unpopular answers I gave them when they were younger, especially when they were teenagers. Likewise with God, there is a point when we do not understand getting a "No" answer. Try this logic: "Dear God, I would like to do a better job serving you. If you would get someone, somehow to give me a lot of money, or let me win the lottery, I would no longer have to work. Then I could spend lots of time witnessing door-to-door. Also I would be able to fish more and witness to those along the streams. And if you would take my arthritis away, I could do even more." Even though a prayer like this could be well intentioned, what do you think God's answer would be?

## WHAT ARE OUR NEEDS?

Who defines our needs?

<sup>6</sup>But thou, when thou prayest, enter into thy closet, and when thou hast shut thy door, pray to thy Father which is in secret; and thy Father which seeth in secret shall reward thee openly.<sup>7</sup>But when ye pray, use not vain repetitions, as the heathen do: for they think that they shall be heard for their much speaking. <sup>8</sup>Be not ye therefore like unto them: for your Father knoweth what things ye have need of, before ye ask him. (Matthew 6:6-8)

God of course defines our needs. We need air to breathe, water to drink, food to eat, clothes for warmth, and a healthy body in order to continue our lives. That takes care of our physical needs. Ninety-nine percent of what we pray for is for the physical. Jesus said, "*The life is more than meat, and the body is more than raiment. Consider the ravens: for they neither sow nor reap; which neither have storehouse nor barn; and God feedeth them: how much more are ye better than the fowls?*" (Luke 12:23-24).

My firm belief is that our prayers for spiritual needs are answered faster and more often positively than are our needs of the flesh. We are quick to plead for our earthly needs, and quick to complain to God for getting "no answer."

Whatever God's reasons are for choosing not to heal in some situations, there is one reason we should discuss. Several years ago I was in the waiting room at my family doctor's office. A man came in from outside and asked if the doctor could see his wife. The man said she was having chest pains. As things progressed, she was later wheeled passed me in a hallway to an examining room. I heard her say that she felt really sick, or words to that effect. A bit later, as I sat in an examination room, I heard a lot of commotion, an ambulance arrive, shouting of emergency orders, and finally, the husband crying loudly "My baby, my baby."

What happened was obvious to me even though I sat in another room. Somber silence followed a flurry of doctor's orders. The doctor eventually came in to see me. I could see he was quite upset over the situation. I told the doctor, "Hundreds of sick people come to see you. You help all of them. But in everyone's life there comes one time when no matter what you do, it

won't be enough." And so with God, there is one time in everyone's life that prayers for healing will not be answered in our human terms. If that ill person is a Child of God, he or she will be healed forever, after this mortal body dies.

## COVENANT: MESSIAH FIRST TO THE JEWS

Prophecy of the coming Kingdom included the promise of a divinely chosen ruler, Messiah, who would obey God and rouse the obedience of the people. He would assert His divine sovereignty over the whole creation and reign on Earth. The Messiah would be a monarch after the style of David, Israel's greatest king.

These twelve Jesus sent forth, and commanded them, saying, Go not into the way of the Gentiles, and into any city of the Samaritans enter ye not: But go rather to the lost sheep of the house of Israel. And as ye go, preach, saying, The kingdom of heaven is at hand. Matthew 10:5-7).

Thus it is written, and thus it behooved Christ to suffer, and to rise from the dead the third day: And that repentance and remission of sins should be preached in his name among all nations, beginning at Jerusalem. Luke 24:46-47).

Another Jewish view led to the motif that the dead of Israel would be resurrected one day to enjoy life in a new Kingdom, and then at some future date God would intervene to judge the wicked. He would transport the righteous to an eternal kingdom. Some believed that a titanic struggle of good and evil would precede the end of the present world and usher in an eternal kingdom for the righteous. This view is somewhat like the New Testament book of Revelation.

Next chapter we will look at the consequences of rejecting God's promised Messiah.



## Chapter 14. Why Have God's People Suffered?



### Adam & Eve Expelled From Eden

Should we blame God for death and disease? God made everything, right? If I build something and it falls over, it is my fault. The difference is that if I build something that falls over, it is because it was not designed or built properly. Remember my two-way radio and my “instruckshins?” I am neither all knowing nor perfect (look at my spelling). Therefore it should not be too surprising if I build a failure.

God is perfect. He knows all. He cannot do anything wrong. When He completed creation on day 6, He called it “good.” Man messed it up. We brought on death and destruction, not God. Let us not blame God. When we blame God we are even sillier than when we hear a tired, frustrated child complain, “You made me mess up.” I know you heard that one before.

When you are ill, would you rather get better or die and go on to Heaven? You would rather get better, right? The worst of the two, death, shows us that God actually cares. Death is brought on by man's sins; we would not obey God. To save us from death, God had to send His son, Jesus Christ, to die on the cross; Jesus had to die so we could live. God will take death, and sickness, away from His children forever in Heaven. So death does show how greatly God loves us.

<sup>55</sup>O death, where is thy sting? O grave, where is thy victory? <sup>56</sup>The sting of death is sin; and the strength of sin is the law. But thanks be to God, which giveth us the victory through our Lord Jesus Christ. (1 Corinthians 15:55-57)

Rhetorical question: what do we do when someone causes death to our child? The late John Gotti allegedly sawed a neighbor in half, alive of course, for purportedly running over his

son with a car. Most of us would never recover from the death of a child and would take grief and hatred to the grave. What did God do when His son was murdered? He made Heaven for us.

## REBELLIOUS CONDUCT

If they obey and serve him, they shall spend their days in prosperity, and their years in pleasures. (Job 36:11).

Deuteronomy chapter 9 gives an explicit narrative of God's people rebelling against Him, His law, and covenants. Can you imagine seeing God come down from a burning mountain? Would you be in awe and obey Him?

ISRAEL, LISTEN! Today you are to cross the Jordan River and begin to dispossess the nations on the other side. Those nations are much greater and more powerful than you are! But the Lord your God will go before you to destroy them so that you will quickly conquer them and drive them out.

Then, when the Lord has done this for you, don't say to yourselves, The Lord has helped us because we are so good! No, it is because of the wickedness of the other nations that he is doing it. It is not at all because you are such fine, upright people that the Lord will drive them out from before you! I say it again, it is only because of the wickedness of the other nations, and because of his promises to your ancestors, Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob, that he will do it. I say it yet again: Jehovah your God is not giving you this good land because you are good, for you are not--you are a wicked, stubborn people.

Don't you remember how continually angry you made the Lord your God out in the wilderness, from the day you left Egypt until now? For all this time you have constantly rebelled against him. He was ready to destroy you. I was on the mountain at the time, receiving the stone tablets with the laws inscribed upon them. He had spoken from the fire-covered mountain while the people had watched below. He told me to go down quickly because the people I had led out of Egypt had defiled themselves, quickly turning away from the laws of God, and had made an idol from molten metal. Let me alone that I may destroy this evil, stubborn people, the Lord told me, and I will blot out their name from under heaven, and I will make a mighty nation of you, mightier and greater than they are.

I came down from the burning mountain, holding in my hands the two tablets inscribed with the laws of God. There below me I could see the calf you had made in your terrible sin against the Lord your God. How quickly you turned away from him! I lifted the tablets high above my head and dashed them to the ground! I smashed them before your eyes! How I feared for you--for the Lord was ready to destroy you. I took your sin--the calf you had made--and burned it and ground it into fine dust, and threw it into the stream that cascaded out of the mountain. Again and again and yet again you rebelled and you refused to obey him.

Yes, you have been rebellious against the Lord from the first day I knew you. That is why I fell down before him. I prayed to him, O Lord God, don't destroy your own people. They are your inheritance saved from Egypt by your mighty power and glorious strength. Don't notice the rebellion and stubbornness of these people, but remember instead your promises to your servants Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob. Oh, please overlook the awful wickedness and sin of these people. For if you destroy them the Egyptians will say, It is because the Lord wasn't able to bring them to the land he promised them, or He destroyed them because he hated them: he

brought them into the wilderness to slay them. They are your people and your inheritance which you brought from Egypt by your great power and your mighty arm. (From Deuteronomy 9 LVB).

I cannot imagine seeing a burning mountain, and then disobeying that God, the living God. Would you see yourself thinking, “I won’t listen to Him, I’ll worship a statue I make myself?”

Moreover, brethren, I would not that ye should be ignorant, how that all our fathers were under the cloud, and all passed through the sea; And were all baptized unto Moses in the cloud and in the sea; And did all eat the same spiritual meat; And did all drink the same spiritual drink: for they drank of that spiritual Rock that followed them: and that Rock was Christ. But with many of them God was not well pleased: for they were overthrown in the wilderness. (1 Corinthians 10:1-5).

## GOD’S WRATH

I know what you are thinking, “A Gentile class clown is going to tell the Jews why they suffer.” Does this fit the definition of “chutzpah?” My favorite example of “chutzpah” is of the man who has killed his parents. He has the impudence to throw himself upon the mercy of the court because he has been orphaned. Might he discover the court’s wrath?

Here is how God describes His wrath against disobedience:

For I am the Lord your God who brought you out of the land of Egypt, so that you would be slaves no longer; I have broken your chains so that you can walk with dignity. But if you will not listen to me or obey me, but reject my laws, this is what I will do to you: I will punish you with sudden terrors and panic, and with tuberculosis and burning fever; your eyes shall be consumed and your life shall ebb away; you will sow your crops in vain, for your enemies will eat them. I will set my face against you and you will flee before your attackers; those who hate you will rule you; you will even run when no one is chasing you! And if you still disobey me, I will punish you seven times more severely for your sins. (Leviticus 26:13-18 LVB).

And Moses with the elders of Israel commanded the people, saying, Keep all the commandments which I command you this day. And Moses charged the people the same day, saying, Cursed be the man that maketh any graven or molten image, an abomination unto the Lord, the work of the hands of the craftsman, and putteth it in a secret place. Cursed be he that setteth light by his father or his mother. Cursed be he that removeth his neighbour's landmark. Cursed be he that maketh the blind to wander out of the way. Cursed be he that perverteth the judgment of the stranger, fatherless, and widow. Cursed be he that lieth with his father's wife; because he uncovereth his father's skirt. Cursed be he that lieth with any manner of beast. Cursed be he that lieth with his sister, the daughter of his father, or the daughter of his mother. Cursed be he that lieth with his mother in law. Cursed be he that smiteth his neighbour secretly. Cursed be he that taketh reward to slay an



innocent person. Cursed be he that confirmeth not all the words of this law to do them. And all the people shall say, Amen. (From Deuteronomy 27:1, 11, 15-26).

At that time Rezin king of Syria recovered Elath to Syria, and drove the Jews from Elath; and the Syrians came to Elath, and dwelt there, unto this day. (2 Kings 16:6 ASV).

## REJECTION OF THE MESSIAH

Christians and Messianic Jews accept Jesus Christ as the Messiah, and believe that the majority of Jews rejected Christ's Messiahship (see chapters 4 and 5). Following is the consequence for rejecting the Messiah:

Mission to the Jews: Ye are the children of the prophets, and of the covenant which God made with our fathers, saying unto Abraham, And in thy seed shall all the kindreds of the earth be blessed. Unto you first God, having raised up his Son Jesus, sent him to bless you, in turning away every one of you from his iniquities. (Acts 3:25-26).

Jerusalem, Jerusalem, you that kill the prophets and stone those who are sent to you! How often have I longed to gather your children together, as a hen gathers her chicks under her wings, and you refused! Look! Your house will be deserted, for, I promise, you shall not see me any more until you are saying: Blessed is he who is coming in the name of the Lord! (Matthew 23:37-39 NJB)

Lament for Jerusalem: As he drew near and came in sight of the city he shed tears over it and said, If you too had only recognised on this day the way to peace! But in fact it is hidden from your eyes! Yes, a time is coming when your enemies will raise fortifications all round you, when they will encircle you and hem you in on every side; they will dash you and the children inside your walls to the ground; they will leave not one stone standing on another within you, because you did not recognise the moment of your visitation. Luke 19:40-44 NJB).

And when (Jesus) was come into his own country, he taught them in their synagogue, insomuch that they were astonished, and said, Whence hath this man this wisdom, and these mighty works? Is not this the carpenter's son? is not his mother called Mary? and his brethren, James, and Joseph, and Simon, and Judas? And his sisters, are they not all with us? Whence then hath this man all these things? And they were offended in him. But Jesus said unto them, A prophet is not without honour, save in his own country, and in his own house. (Matthew 13:54-57).

In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God. The same was in the beginning with God. All things were made by him; and without him was not any thing made that was made. In him was life; and the life was the light of men. He was in the world, and the world was made by him, and the world knew him not. He came unto his own, and his own received him

not. But as many as received him, to them gave he power to become the sons of God, even to them that believe on his name: Which were born, not of blood, nor of the will of the flesh, nor of the will of man, but of God. (John 1:1-4, 10-13).

The God of Abraham, and of Isaac, and of Jacob, the God of our fathers, hath glorified his Son Jesus; whom ye delivered up, and denied him in the presence of Pilate, when he was determined to let him go. But ye denied the Holy One and the Just, and desired a murderer to be granted unto you; And killed the Prince of life, whom God hath raised from the dead; whereof we are witnesses. (Acts 3:13-15).

But when the Jews saw the multitudes, they were filled with envy, and spake against those things which were spoken by Paul, contradicting and blaspheming. Then Paul and Barnabas waxed bold, and said, It was necessary that the word of God should first have been spoken to you: but seeing ye put it from you, and judge yourselves unworthy of everlasting life, lo, we turn to the Gentiles. For so hath the Lord commanded us, saying, I have set thee to be a light of the Gentiles, that thou shouldest be for salvation unto the ends of the earth. And when the Gentiles heard this, they were glad, and glorified the word of the Lord: and as many as were ordained to eternal life believed. And the word of the Lord was published throughout all the region. (Acts 13:45-49).

## SUFFERING

It seems that God tolerated suffering at the hands of the Egyptians for some reason. Suffering also comes at the hand of God due to disobedience. God made a covenant with King Josiah:

And the king sent, and they gathered unto him all the elders of Judah and of Jerusalem. And the king went up into the house of the Lord, and all the men of Judah and all the inhabitants of Jerusalem with him, and the priests, and the prophets, and all the people, both small and great: and he read in their ears all the words of the book of the covenant which was found in the house of the Lord. And the king stood by a pillar, and made a covenant before the Lord, to walk after the Lord, and to keep his commandments and his testimonies and his statutes with all their heart and all their soul, to perform the words of this covenant that were written in this book. And all the people stood to the covenant. (2 Kings 23:1-3).

After King Josiah, Solomon reigned, and the people disobeyed God. After Solomon's death, the kingdom was divided in two parts. The north fell to Assyria, and the southern part, Judah, to the Babylonians. The days as a political and military power were ended when most of the Israelites from the south were taken to Babylon. This captivity began a dispersion of the Jewish people throughout the world, which lasted from that time until the present.

When the Romans destroyed the Temple in AD 70 and ended Jewish opposition 60 years later, Jerusalem as the center of worship ceased to exist. The rabbis were the group left to provide guidance for the Jewish people. The program of the rabbis replaced Temple worship and pilgrimages to Jerusalem with the study of God's law, prayer, and good works. The new place of

worship became the local synagogue where Jews could gather together and hear the Scriptures read and interpreted, sing the Psalms, and pray. Some Jews were allowed to return to their homeland beginning in the 6th century BC. From that time on, however, the region was under the domination of one foreign power after another. Except for a brief period of independence, until the modern state of Israel, the Jewish people had no homeland. Revolts against Rome in the 1st and 2nd centuries AD proved fruitless.

The rabbis attempted to standardize religious practices for the dispersed community and to build up a large body of interpretation of God's law. This collection of rabbinic law, called the Mishna, became the primary reference source in all rabbinic schools and the core around which the Talmud (commentaries on the Mishna) was later compiled. The rabbis also oversaw the assembly of the collection now known as the Hebrew Bible.<sup>37</sup>

## PRESENT DAY SUFFERING- THE MIDDLE EAST

As a result of the 9-11 attacks, we are seeing more and more interviews of individuals from Muslim countries. One statement that keeps coming up is, paraphrased, "We hate American's because the Jews that live there have all the money." I do not know if I am stating that quite right- it is so ludicrous as to be dumbfounding. I think the Muslim (and Arab) reason for hating Jews would be whatever is in front of them: "We hate Jews because they have all the money"; "because they don't have any money and are beggars"; "because some have beards"; "because some don't have beards"; etc.

The big reason that Arabs, Palestinians, and Muslims hate Jews is because of fulfillment of Biblical prophecy:

Two phenomena of the 20th century have deeply influenced modern Judaism: Zionism and the Holocaust. Zionism, the reassertion of Jewish nationhood and establishing the state of Israel, emerged in the late 19th century under the leadership of Theodor Herzl. Although not winning the loyalty of all Jews, Zionism gained momentum steadily after the Holocaust, which spurred the proponents of a Jewish homeland to achieve their goal. Three years after the end of the war with Germany, the State of Israel was established in Palestine. For the first time in nearly two millennia, the Jewish people had their country again.

The history of Israel may be viewed as the tale of a tiny nation caught up in the struggles between the great powers of the day. But Jews see it differently. Israel's conviction is that the one God, creator of the universe, was active in every phase of its history. He chose to select Israel from all the nations of the world and use it as the vehicle for bringing knowledge of Him to the rest of the nations. This arrangement between God and Israel is called a covenant. God promised to make Israel a great nation, and, in response, Israel was to be obedient to Him forever.<sup>38</sup>

---

<sup>37</sup> Portions excerpted and condensed from *Compton's Interactive Encyclopedia*. Copyright © 1994, 1995, 1996, 1997 The Learning Company, Inc. All Rights Reserved.

<sup>38</sup> Portions excerpted and condensed from *Compton's Interactive Encyclopedia*. Copyright © 1994, 1995, 1996, 1997 The Learning Company, Inc. All Rights Reserved.

## PRESENT DAY SUFFERING- HEALTH

I am a severe migraine sufferer, and have been for most of my adult life. How many times have I asked God to take these from me; Ten thousand times- once a day for 25 years? I have spent many hours over many days for many years throughout several decades lying in bed, writhing in pain, praying yet receiving no relief. Aloud I have asked God countless times why He would not answer my prayer. What good was it doing me or anyone else for me to be in this pain? Family outings were spoiled, plans ruined, and even going to church is often interrupted. I still get these headaches. Does that mean God does not care for me? I know that He has heard my prayers.

God must care for me because He sent His Son to die for me. (Would I send my son to die for Him?) He must care for me a lot! So when I prayed 10,000 times, what did God say to me, how did He answer? Why did I not hear an answer for so many years? I worded my pleading prayers every possible way that I could.

One answer to my prayers was to find a doctor that could help. Under the care of Dr. R. Michael Gallagher<sup>39</sup>, one of the world's leading authorities on headaches and treatment, I have greatly improved. I still get a dozen or more migraines per month. Effective abortive medicines have become available in recent years; nonetheless, often these medications are slow or are ineffective on the worst of my headaches, which can last several days.

So what is God's answer when a Christian is suffering and praying for help? He heals multitudes of sick people. He just does not heal everyone. Though He has the power and authority, He does not for reasons we do not understand. I had a tough time with this discernment until I read "In the Grip of Grace" by Max Lucado. One chapter in this book contemplates an illness or circumstance the apostle Paul had, which is not named in the Bible, but was apparently of major discomfort to Paul. Paul's attitude was unlike mine:

<sup>5b</sup>I will not boast about myself, except about my weaknesses...<sup>7</sup>To keep me from becoming conceited because of these surpassingly great revelations, there was given me a thorn in my flesh, a messenger of Satan, to torment me. <sup>8</sup>Three times I pleaded with the Lord to take it away from me. <sup>9</sup>But He said to me, "My grace is sufficient for you, for my power is made perfect in weakness." <sup>10</sup>Therefore I will boast all the more gladly about my weaknesses, so that Christ's power may rest on me. <sup>11</sup>That is why, for Christ's sake, I delight in weaknesses, in insults, in hardships, in persecutions, in difficulties. For when I am weak, then I am strong. (2 Corinthians 12:5b, 7-11 NIV)

When I read this scripture, I immediately realized how trivial my headaches are compared to the importance of eternal life. It touched me so I cried and cried, and thanked God for His grace that would allow me to spend eternity with my Lord free of ailments. Sickness, disease, and death are a result of first sin. God has no obligation for the fall of man and the price that came with the fall. But He provided a substitute to take away our punishment of death.

I shared with my mother what this scripture meant to me. Little did I know that the very same verses got her through a difficult, bed-ridden pregnancy 45 years earlier. My sister, Jane, was the result of that pregnancy. Jane is the one that told me of a friend, Dr. R. Michael Gallagher, who diagnoses and treats headaches. She convinced me to make the 340 mile round

---

<sup>39</sup> Dr. Gallagher was the principal investigator in the development of the medication involved in the well-publicized episode of Terrell Davis overcoming a migraine and getting back into the 1998 Super Bowl, going on to win the game and the MVP award.

trips to see him. *Can you see that God began answering my prayer, through 2 Corinthians chapter 12, decades before I prayed it?*

## WHY WON'T HE HEAL US?

God's people suffer with diseases as often and as bad as the most heinous villain. We often question, "Since God hears our prayers, why are we not healed?" Scripture tells us that God hears our prayers, and that He can heal us.

Heal me, O Lord, and I shall be healed; save me, and I shall be saved: for thou art my praise. (Jeremiah 17:14)

For I will restore health unto thee, and I will heal thee of thy wounds, saith the Lord; (Jeremiah 30:17a)

<sup>13a</sup>Is any among you afflicted? let him pray. <sup>14</sup>Is any sick among you? let him call for the elders of the church; and let them pray over him, anointing him with oil in the name of the Lord: <sup>15</sup>And the prayer of faith shall save the sick, and the Lord shall raise him up; and if he have committed sins, they shall be forgiven him. <sup>16</sup>Confess your faults one to another, and pray one for another, that ye may be healed. The effectual fervent prayer of a righteous man availeth much. (James 5:13a-16)

Perhaps we do not understand how God hears and answers our prayers. Should God answer "yes" to everything we ask? Should we be His followers for greed? Yet, should God's Children suffer?

## "GOOD" SUFFERING

Sometimes we use the phrase "No pain, no gain" when referring to the rigors of a physical workout. There are Biblical provisions and instances when God uses illnesses for the good of His people.

There is Sin Unto Death described in the New Testament: *There is a sin unto death: I do not say that he shall pray for it.* (1 John 5:16b). If one does not repent of his sins, and continues in this sin, he could be chastened. The Apostle Paul's words: *Wherefore whosoever shall eat this bread, and drink this cup of the Lord, unworthily, shall be guilty of the body and blood of the Lord. But let a man examine himself, and so let him eat of that bread, and drink of that cup. For he that eateth and drinketh unworthily, eateth and drinketh damnation to himself, not discerning the Lord's body. For this cause many are weak and sickly among you, and many sleep.* (1 Corinthians 11:27-30).

Neglect of chastening can result in physical death. To quote Paul again: *It is reported commonly that there is fornication among you, and such fornication as is not so much as named among the Gentiles, that one should have his father's wife. And ye are puffed up, and have not rather mourned, that he that hath done this deed might be taken away from among you. For I verily, as absent in body, but present in spirit, have judged already, as though I were present, concerning him that hath so done this deed, In the name of our Lord Jesus Christ, when ye are*

*gathered together, and my spirit, with the power of our Lord Jesus Christ, To deliver such an one unto Satan for the destruction of the flesh, that the spirit may be saved in the day of the Lord Jesus. Your glorying is not good. Know ye not that a little leaven leaveneth the whole lump? Purge out therefore the old leaven, that ye may be a new lump, as ye are unleavened. For even Christ our passover is sacrificed for us: (1 Corinthians 5:1-7).*

Theodore Epp wrote an appropriate book which explains the why, how, and effect of chastening from God.<sup>40</sup> Interesting points from Dr. Epp:

- Suffering is a result of sin. It is physical and mental. It can build us- witness Job- and produces spiritual growth.
- Satan hates God and wanted to drive a wedge between himself and God. Man has free will and chose to sin.
- Christ was the supreme sufferer. Although He himself is perfect, His suffering brought us hope and eternal life.
- Sickness tests our faith. If we can overcome our trials, we will find joy within.
- God permits suffering to chasten us. Chastisement can be disciplinary, corrective, educative, or preventive.
- Suffering also can be purifying, fruit bearing, perfecting, and reducing of the ego.
- Learn how to suffer, with and for Christ. We should not despise the chastening. Do not become calloused, “murmur,” criticize God, or give up.
- Renew your confidence in God. Pray. Count your blessings.
- Praise the Lord, love others, and submit yourself to God.
- Glorify God!

It is important to ask for forgiveness of your sins as soon as you recognize them, and to turn from that sin.

## SECTION CONCLUSION

Man in the Hebrew Bible is seen as a creature of God, put on Earth to be free and responsible before Him. Israel's ideas on man's responsibilities to God and his fellow creatures were spelled out in great detail. Mankind is created by God and subject to His divine will. This will is expressed in the law. Individual and community always are together. There is no life for the individual outside the community: God called a whole people for Himself, not isolated individuals. A just society requires just individuals, and just individuals function best in a just community.

The whole law can be summed up as total devotion to God and love for one's neighbor. The statutes, as collected in the book of Leviticus, specify the many ways these two injunctions are to be carried out. In rabbinic Judaism, the supreme virtue for individuals and the community is the study of the Torah, for it is by careful scrutiny of God's laws that true obedience can be learned. The Torah is a guide to right attitudes and of specific directives to be observed in detail.<sup>41</sup>

The Messiah has provided salvation unto God's people that believe on Him. Is spending

---

<sup>40</sup> Epp, Theodore, *Why Do Christians Suffer?* Lincoln, Nebraska, Back to the Bible Publications, 1970.

<sup>41</sup> Excerpted and condensed from *Compton's Interactive Encyclopedia*. Copyright © 1994, 1995, 1996, 1997 The Learning Company, Inc. All Rights Reserved.

a joyful eternity with God and other loved ones within the beauty of Heaven more important to you than the trivial trials of this life? God has a master plan and wants eternal life for us. But we have sinned and interrupted God's plan. So God sent His Son to pay the price of our sins so that we might be saved, if we will just accept this free gift. The Bible says:

For the wages of sin is death; but the gift of God is eternal life through Jesus Christ our Lord. (Romans 6:23).

For by grace are ye saved through faith; and that not of yourselves: it is the gift of God: Not of works, lest any man should boast. (Ephesians 2:8-9).

Let not your heart be troubled: ye believe in God, believe also in me. In my Father's house are many mansions: if it were not so, I would have told you. I go to prepare a place for you. And if I go and prepare a place for you, I will come again, and receive you unto myself; that where I am, there ye may be also. (John 14:1-3).

There are two closing prayers for this chapter. The first is reserved for those who believe in the Messiah Jesus Christ as their Lord and Personal Savior, and need strengthened due to an affliction or other physical or mental pain.

Dear Father in Heaven, "You know I am suffering from \_\_\_\_\_. I need your help so that I might bear this affliction. Help me to understand your will for me. Please remove this from me if it is your will. If not, as you told Paul 2000 years ago, your grace is sufficient for me. Please give me strength. In Jesus name we pray, Amen.

To those of you who still do not have the joy of knowing the assurance of eternal life through the Savior Christ Jesus, the following prayer is for you. Many have said they would die for their country, their commanding officer, or some other earthly leader. If you join God's Army, you might not have to die for Him, you might only have your pain to glorify Him rather than the serpent that tempted man into sin.

Dear God, "I have read how you sent your Son the Messiah to suffer a terrible death, in humility, in pain incomprehensible, for my sins. This was done out of your love because my ancestors and I were weak and sinned against you. I have read that the wages of sin is death, and that those who do not follow you are damned to an eternity in hell. I know I am a sinner and need you. I ask that Jesus enter my heart and my life to save me from hell and to give me eternal life with you in Heaven, a life with a new incorruptible body. Thank you for hearing my prayer and saving my soul. I ask this prayer in the name of your only Son, Jesus Christ, Amen."



## PART V DEPART IN PEACE



DANIEL PROTECTED BY THE LORD ALMIGHTY.

See now that I, even I, am he, and there is no god beside me; I kill and I make alive; I wound and I heal; and there is none that can deliver out of my hand. Deuteronomy 32:39 RSV



## Chapter 15. Satan: The Enemy



During one of our philosophical discussions, Shelley Kolbert and I drifted from an article taken from the February 16, 2001, radio broadcast *Answers...with Ken Ham*<sup>42</sup>, to the subject of Satan. The essence of the radio broadcast was that the Book of Genesis is vital to understanding the New Testament doctrine.

Shelley and I had a question about “the enemy.” How do the number of references to Satan found in the Old Testament compare to the New Testament? Since the New Testament is the evangelical anthology, we would expect to find the most references to be there. That is what the following indicate.

### THE PERSONALITY OF SATAN

**Original sin: a deceitful liar:** Now the **serpent** was more subtle than any beast of the field which the Lord God had made. And he said unto the woman, Yea, hath God said, Ye shall not eat of every tree of the garden? (Genesis 3:1)

**Tormentor:** But the Spirit of the Lord departed from Saul, and an **evil spirit** from the Lord troubled him. And Saul's servants said unto him, Behold now, an evil spirit from God troubleth thee. (1 Samuel 16:14-15)

**Liar:** And there came forth a spirit, and stood before the Lord, and said, I will persuade him. And the Lord said unto him, Wherewith? And he said, I will go forth, and I will be a **lying spirit** in the mouth of all his prophets. And he said, Thou shalt persuade him, and prevail also: go forth, and do so. (1 Kings 22:21-22)

**False god:** But the angel of the Lord said to Elijah the Tishbite, Arise, go up to meet the messengers of the king of Samaria, and say unto them, Is it not because there is not a God in Israel, that ye go to inquire of **Baalzebub** the god of Ekron? (2 Kings 1:3)

**Tempter:** And **Satan** stood up against Israel, and provoked David to number Israel. (1 Chronicles 21:1)

**Tempter:** Now there was a day when the sons of God came to present themselves before the

---

<sup>42</sup> Answers in Genesis Ministries, radio broadcast, Florence, KY, USA.

Lord, and **Satan** came also among them. And the Lord said unto Satan, Whence comest thou? Then Satan answered the Lord, and said, From going to and fro in the earth, and from walking up and down in it. And the Lord said unto Satan, Hast thou considered my servant Job, that there is none like him in the earth, a perfect and an upright man, one that feareth God, and escheweth evil? Then Satan answered the Lord, and said, Doth Job fear God for nought? Hast not thou made an hedge about him, and about his house, and about all that he hath on every side? Thou hast blessed the work of his hands, and his substance is increased in the land. But put forth thine hand now, and touch all that he hath, and he will curse thee to thy face. And the Lord said unto Satan, Behold, all that he hath is in thy power; only upon himself put not forth thine hand. So Satan went forth from the presence of the Lord. (Job 1:6-12)

And **Satan** answered the Lord, and said, Skin for skin, yea, all that a man hath will he give for his life. (Job 2:4)

**Adversary:** Oh that one would hear me! behold, my desire is, that the Almighty would answer me, and that **mine adversary** had written a book. (Job 31:35)

**Destroyer:** Concerning the works of men, by the word of thy lips I have kept me from the paths of the **destroyer**. (Psalms 17:4)

**Adversary:** O God, how long shall the **adversary** reproach? shall the enemy blaspheme thy name forever? (Psalms 74:10)

**Enemy:** I will say of the Lord, He is my refuge and my fortress: my God; in him will I trust. Surely he shall deliver thee from the snare of **the fowler**, and from the noisome pestilence. (Psalms 91:2,3)

**Friend of the wicked:** Set thou a wicked man over him: and let **Satan** stand at his right hand. (Psalms 109:6)

**Proud:** How art thou fallen from heaven, O **Lucifer**, son of the morning! how art thou cut down to the ground, which didst weaken the nations! For thou hast said in thine heart, I will ascend into heaven, I will exalt my throne above the stars of God: I will sit also upon the mount of the congregation, in the sides of the north: I will ascend above the heights of the clouds; I will be like the most High. Yet thou shalt be brought down to hell, to the sides of the pit. (Isaiah 14:12-15)

**Destroyer:** The lion is come up from his thicket, and **the destroyer** of the Gentiles is on his way; he is gone forth from his place to make thy land desolate; and thy cities shall be laid waste, without an inhabitant. (Jeremiah 4:7)

**Accuser:** And he shewed me Joshua the high priest standing before the angel of the Lord, and **Satan** standing at his right hand to resist him. And the Lord said unto Satan, The Lord rebuke thee, O Satan; even the Lord that hath chosen Jerusalem rebuke thee: is not this a brand plucked out of the fire? (Zechariah 3:1-2)

## NEW TESTAMENT

**Tempter:** Then saith Jesus unto him, Get thee hence, **Satan**: for it is written, Thou shalt worship the Lord thy God, and him only shalt thou serve. Then the devil leaveth him, and, behold, angels came and ministered unto him. Matthew 4:10-11 (Also Matthew 4:1, Mark 1:13, Luke 4:2, Acts 5:3, 1 Corinthians 7:5).

**Tormentor:** And Jesus knew their thoughts, and said unto them, Every kingdom divided against itself is brought to desolation; and every city or house divided against itself shall not stand: And if **Satan** cast out Satan, he is divided against himself; how shall then his kingdom stand? And if I by Beelzebub cast out devils, by whom do your children cast them out?

therefore they shall be your judges. But if I cast out devils by the Spirit of God, then the kingdom of God is come unto you. Matthew 12:25-28. (Also Mark 3:23 and Luke 8:29, Luke 11:18-20, Luke 22:31-32, 2 Corinthians 12:7-9).

**Representation of evil:** But he turned, and said unto Peter, Get thee behind me, **Satan**: thou art an offence unto me: for thou savourest not the things that be of God, but those that be of men. Then said Jesus unto his disciples, If any man will come after me, let him deny himself, and take up his cross, and follow me. For whosoever will save his life shall lose it: and whosoever will lose his life for my sake shall find it. For what is a man profited, if he shall gain the whole world, and lose his own soul? or what shall a man give in exchange for his soul? Matthew 16:23-26. (Also Mark 8:33, Luke 4:8, Eph. 4:26-27, 1 Thess. 2:18, 1 Tim. 1:20, 5:15, 2 Tim. 2:24-26, 1 John 2:13, 3:8-10).

**Condemned:** Then shall he say also unto them on the left hand, Depart from me, ye cursed, into everlasting fire, prepared for **the devil** and his angels: (Matthew 25:41, Hebrews 2:13-15).

**Destroyer:** The sower soweth the word. And these are they by the way side, where the word is sown; but when they have heard, **Satan** cometh immediately, and taketh away the word that was sown in their hearts. (Mark 4:14-15, compare Matthew 13:39 and Luke 8:11-12)

**Subject to Christ:** He that heareth you heareth me; and he that despiseth you despiseth me; and he that despiseth me despiseth him that sent me. And the seventy returned again with joy, saying, Lord, even the devils are subject unto us through thy name. And he said unto them, I beheld **Satan** as lightning fall from heaven. Behold, I give unto you power to tread on serpents and scorpions, and over all the power of the enemy: and nothing shall by any means hurt you. (Luke 10:16-19, John 14:30, Acts 10:38, 1 Cor. 5:4-5)

**Reviler:** And the ruler of the synagogue answered with indignation, because that Jesus had healed on the sabbath day, and said unto the people, There are six days in which men ought to work: in them therefore come and be healed, and not on the sabbath day. The Lord then answered him, and said, Thou hypocrite, doth not each one of you on the sabbath loose his ox or his ass from the stall, and lead him away to watering? And ought not this woman, being a daughter of Abraham, whom **Satan** hath bound, lo, these eighteen years, be loosed from this bond on the sabbath day? (Luke 13:14-16)

**Antichrist:** Now the feast of unleavened bread drew nigh, which is called the Passover. And the chief priests and scribes sought how they might kill him; for they feared the people. Then entered **Satan** into Judas surnamed Iscariot, being of the number of the twelve. And he went his way, and communed with the chief priests and captains, how he might betray him unto them. Luke 22:1-4. (Also John 13:2, Revelations chapters 11 through 20).

**Liar:** Ye are of your father **the devil**, and the lusts of your father ye will do. He was a murderer from the beginning, and abode not in the truth, because there is no truth in him. When he speaketh a lie, he speaketh of his own: for he is a liar, and the father of it. John 8:44 (Also, 2 Thess. 2:8-10, 1 Tim. 4:1-3).

**Wolf:** I am the good shepherd: the good shepherd giveth his life for the sheep. But he that is an hireling, and not the shepherd, whose own the sheep are not, seeth the **wolf** coming, and leaveth the sheep, and fleeth: and the wolf catcheth them, and scattereth the sheep. (John 10:11-12)

**Unrighteous ruler:** Now is the judgment of this world: now shall the **prince of this world** be cast out. John 12:31. (Also, Acts 13:10, 2 Cor. 6:14-15, Ephesians 2:1-3).

**Prince of this world:** Nevertheless I tell you the truth; It is expedient for you that I go away: for if I go not away, the Comforter will not come unto you; but if I depart, I will send him unto you. And when he is come, he will reprove the world of sin, and of righteousness, and of judgment: Of sin, because they believe not on me; Of righteousness, because I go to my Father,

and ye see me no more; Of judgment, because the **prince of this world** is judged. (John 16:7-11)

**Subject to God:** But rise, and stand upon thy feet: for I have appeared unto thee for this purpose, to make thee a minister and a witness both of these things which thou hast seen, and of those things in the which I will appear unto thee; Delivering thee from the people, and from the Gentiles, unto whom now I send thee, To open their eyes, and to turn them from darkness to light, and from the power of **Satan** unto God, that they may receive forgiveness of sins, and inheritance among them which are sanctified by faith that is in me. Acts 26:16-18. (Romans 16:20, James 4:7).

**Deceiver:** For to this end also did I write, that I might know the proof of you, whether ye be obedient in all things. To whom ye forgive any thing, I forgive also: for if I forgave any thing, to whom I forgave it, for your sakes forgave I it in the person of Christ; Lest **Satan** should get an advantage of us: for we are not ignorant of his devices. 2 Corinthians 2:9-11. (Also 2 Corinthians 4:3-5, 11:3, 11:12-15, 1 Timothy 3:6-7).

**The enemy:** Put on the whole armour of God, that ye may be able to stand against the wiles of **the devil**. For we wrestle not against flesh and blood, but against principalities, against powers, against the rulers of the darkness of this world, against spiritual wickedness in high places. Wherefore take unto you the whole armour of God, that ye may be able to withstand in the evil day, and having done all, to stand. Ephesians 6:11-13. (Also, Jude 1:9, Revelation 2:9, 2:13, 2:14, 2:24, 3:9).

**Adversary:** Be sober, be vigilant; because your adversary **the devil**, as a roaring lion, walketh about, seeking whom he may devour: (1 Peter 5:8)

**The angel that sinned:** For if God spared not **the angels that sinned**, but cast them down to hell, and delivered them into chains of darkness, to be reserved unto judgment; And spared not the old world, but saved Noah the eighth person, a preacher of righteousness, bringing in the flood upon the world of the ungodly; And turning the cities of Sodom and Gomorrah into ashes condemned them with an overthrow, making them an example unto those that after should live ungodly; (2 Peter 2:4-6)

**Angel of the bottomless pit:** And they had a king over them, which is the **angel of the bottomless pit**, whose name in the Hebrew tongue is **Abaddon**, but in the Greek tongue hath his name **Apollyon**. (Revelation 9:11)

For they are the spirits of **devils**, working miracles, which go forth unto the kings of the earth and of the whole world, to gather them to the battle of that great day of God Almighty. (Revelations 16:14)

## VICTORY OVER SATAN

**Antichrist:** And I saw an angel come down from heaven, having the key of the bottomless pit and a great chain in his hand. And he laid hold on **the dragon, that old serpent, which is the Devil, and Satan**, and bound him a thousand years, And cast him into the bottomless pit, and shut him up, and set a seal upon him, that he should deceive the nations no more, till the thousand years should be fulfilled: and after that he must be loosed a little season. (Revelation 20:1-3)

**Satan cast out of Heaven:** And there appeared a great wonder in heaven; a woman clothed with the sun, and the moon under her feet, and upon her head a crown of twelve stars: And she being with child cried, travailing in birth, and pained to be delivered. And there appeared another wonder in heaven; and behold a **great red dragon**, having seven heads and ten horns,

and seven crowns upon his heads. And his tail drew the third part of the stars of heaven, and did cast them to the earth: and the dragon stood before the woman which was ready to be delivered, for to devour her child as soon as it was born. And she brought forth a man child, who was to rule all nations with a rod of iron: and her child was caught up unto God, and to his throne. (Revelation 12:1-5)

And when the thousand years are expired, **Satan** shall be loosed out of his prison, And shall go out to deceive the nations which are in the four quarters of the earth, Gog, and Magog, to gather them together to battle: the number of whom is as the sand of the sea. And they went up on the breadth of the earth, and compassed the camp of the saints about, and the beloved city: and fire came down from God out of heaven, and devoured them. And the devil that deceived them was cast into the lake of fire and brimstone, where the beast and the false prophet are, and shall be tormented day and night for ever and ever. (Revelation 20:7-10)

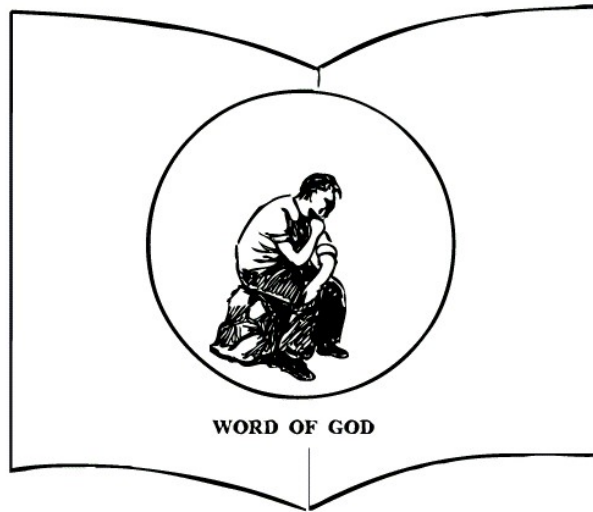
Therefore are they before the throne of God, and serve him day and night in his temple: and he that sitteth on the throne shall dwell among them. They shall hunger no more, neither thirst any more; neither shall the sun light on them, nor any heat. For the Lamb which is in the midst of the throne shall feed them, and shall lead them unto living fountains of waters; and God shall wipe away all tears from their eyes. (Rev. 7:15-17)

God and Satan are as opposite as opposites get, as far as the east is from the west. Satan has no power over God; God has all power over his creation, including Satan, whom He created. God gives us great power: *As far as the east is from the west, so far hath he removed our transgressions from us.* (Psalms 103:12).

Satan is the destroyer. Jesus is the Savior. Have you accepted Jesus as your Savior? If you will, just pray, “Dear God, I know I am a sinner and that you sent your Son to die for my sins. I accept your free gift and want Jesus to be my personal Savior. Jesus, please enter my life and guide me. In Jesus name I pray. Amen.”



## Chapter 16. Summary & Conclusion



In the Lord put I my trust: how say ye to my soul, Flee as a bird to your mountain? For, lo, the wicked bend their bow, they make ready their arrow upon the string, that they may privily shoot at the upright in heart. If the foundations be destroyed, what can the righteous do? (Psalms 11:1-3)

Enter in at the narrow gate, for wide is the gate that leadeth to destruction. Because narrow is the gate and hard is the way which leadeth unto life. (From Matt. 7:13-14)

This entire book has been about foundations. My commercial buildings would not stand without foundations. Not just foundations, *strong* foundations. There is a New Testament parable of a foolish man who built his house upon the sand-- it does not stand. He should have built his house upon the rock. Our spiritual foundations, The Law, are laid in the first five books of the Bible, The Pentateuch. The rest of the Bible is based on The Law.

### BIBLICAL SUMMARY

The following few verses summarize this entire book:

The Creation (Chapters 1-3): *In the beginning God created the heaven and the earth.* (Genesis 1:1).

*For in six days the Lord made heaven and earth, the sea, and all that in them is, and rested the seventh day: wherefore the Lord blessed the sabbath day, and hallowed it.* (Exodus 20:11).

Was a Messiah Prophesied? (Chapter 4): *Thou hast multiplied the nation, and not increased the*

*joy: they joy before thee according to the joy in harvest, and as men rejoice when they divide the spoil. For thou hast broken the yoke of his burden, and the staff of his shoulder, the rod of his oppressor, as in the day of Midian. For every battle of the warrior is with confused noise, and garments rolled in blood; but this shall be with burning and fuel of fire. For unto us a child is born, unto us a son is given: and the government shall be upon his shoulder: and his name shall be called Wonderful, Counsellor, The mighty God, the everlasting Father, The Prince of Peace. Of the increase of his government and peace there shall be no end, upon the throne of David, and upon his kingdom, to order it, and to establish it with judgment and with justice from henceforth even for ever. The zeal of the Lord of hosts will perform this. (Isaiah 9:3-7). The reason for the Messiah: I have blotted out, as a thick cloud, thy transgressions, and, as a cloud, thy sins: return unto me; for I have redeemed thee. (Isaiah 44:22).*

Is Jesus Christ the Messiah? (Chapter 5): PROPHECY: *Therefore my heart is glad, and my glory rejoiceth: my flesh also shall rest in hope. For thou wilt not leave my soul in hell; neither wilt thou suffer thine Holy One to see corruption. (Psalms 16:9-10).*

FULFILLMENT: *Men and brethren, let me freely speak unto you of the patriarch David, that he is both dead and buried, and his sepulchre is with us unto this day. Therefore being a prophet, and knowing that God had sworn with an oath to him, that of the fruit of his loins, according to the flesh, he would raise up Christ to sit on his throne; He seeing this before spake of the resurrection of Christ, that his soul was not left in hell, neither his flesh did see corruption. (Acts 2:29-31).*

PROPHECY: *Because ye have said, We have made a covenant with death, and with hell are we at agreement; when the overflowing scourge shall pass through, it shall not come unto us: for we have made lies our refuge, and under falsehood have we hid ourselves: Therefore thus saith the Lord God, Behold, I lay in Zion for a foundation a stone, a tried stone, a precious corner stone, a sure foundation: he that believeth shall not make haste. (Isaiah 28:15-16).*

FULFILLMENT: *Ye also, as lively stones, are built up a spiritual house, an holy priesthood, to offer up spiritual sacrifices, acceptable to God by Jesus Christ. Wherefore also it is contained in the scripture, Behold, I lay in Sion a chief corner stone, elect, precious: and he that believeth on him shall not be confounded. Unto you therefore which believe he is precious: but unto them which be disobedient, the stone which the builders disallowed, the same is made the head of the corner, And a stone of stumbling, and a rock of offence, even to them which stumble at the word, being disobedient: whereunto also they were appointed. (1 Peter 2:5-8).*

God's View: Does it Matter What We Believe? (Chapter 6): *For ever, O Lord, thy word is settled in heaven. Thy faithfulness is unto all generations: thou hast established the earth, and it abideth. Thy word is true from the beginning: and every one of thy righteous judgments endureth for ever. (Psalms 119:89,90,160).*

*And as Moses lifted up the serpent in the wilderness, even so must the Son of man be lifted up: That whosoever believeth in him should not perish, but have eternal life. For God so loved the world, that he gave his only begotten Son, that whosoever believeth in him should not perish, but have everlasting life. For God sent not his Son into the world to condemn the world; but that the world through him might be saved. He that believeth on him is not condemned: but he that believeth not is condemned already, because he hath not believed in the name of the only begotten Son of God. (John 3:14-18).*

Abortion (Chapter 7): *Thou shalt not kill. (Exodus 20:13).*

*Will the Lord be pleased with thousands of rams, or with ten thousands of rivers of oil? shall I*

*give my firstborn for my transgression, the fruit of my body for the sin of my soul? (Micah 6:7).*

Homosexuality (Chapter 8): *Thou shalt not lie with mankind, as with womankind: it is abomination. Neither shalt thou lie with any beast to defile thyself therewith: neither shall any woman stand before a beast to lie down thereto: it is confusion. (Leviticus 18:22-23).*

Marriage (Chapter 9): *And the Lord God said, It is not good that the man should be alone; I will make him an help meet for him. And the Lord God caused a deep sleep to fall upon Adam, and he slept: and he took one of his ribs, and closed up the flesh instead thereof; And the rib, which the Lord God had taken from man, made he a woman, and brought her unto the man. And Adam said, This is now bone of my bones, and flesh of my flesh: she shall be called Woman, because she was taken out of Man. Therefore shall a man leave his father and his mother, and shall cleave unto his wife: and they shall be one flesh. (Genesis 2:18, 21-24).*

Racism & Prejudice (Chapter 10): *Thou shalt not hate thy brother in thine heart: thou shalt in any wise rebuke thy neighbour, and not suffer sin upon him. Thou shalt not avenge, nor bear any grudge against the children of thy people, but thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself: I am the Lord. (Leviticus 19:17-18).*

Eternity: Is There an Afterlife? (Chapter 11): *For thou, Lord, art high above all the earth: thou art exalted far above all gods. Ye that love the Lord, hate evil: he preserveth the souls of his saints; he delivereth them out of the hand of the wicked. (Psalms 97:9-10).*

*In my Father's house are many mansions: if it were not so, I would have told you. I go to prepare a place for you. And if I go and prepare a place for you, I will come again, and receive you unto myself; that where I am, there ye may be also. (John 14:2-3).*

Should Churches Keep Up? (Chapter 12): *For ever, O Lord, thy word is settled in heaven. Thy faithfulness is unto all generations: thou hast established the earth, and it abideth. Thy word is true from the beginning: and every one of thy righteous judgments endureth for ever. (Psalms 119:89,90,160)*

The Covenant and Promises. (Chapter 13): *The Lord did not set his love upon you, nor choose you, because ye were more in number than any people; for ye were the fewest of all people: But because the Lord loved you, and because he would keep the oath which he had sworn unto your fathers, hath the Lord brought you out with a mighty hand, and redeemed you out of the house of bondmen, from the hand of Pharaoh king of Egypt. Know therefore that the Lord thy God, he is God, the faithful God, which keepeth covenant and mercy with them that love him and keep his commandments to a thousand generations; And repayeth them that hate him to their face, to destroy them: he will not be slack to him that hateth him, he will repay him to his face. Thou shalt therefore keep the commandments, and the statutes, and the judgments, which I command thee this day, to do them. Wherefore it shall come to pass, if ye hearken to these judgments, and keep, and do them, that the Lord thy God shall keep unto thee the covenant and the mercy which he sware unto thy fathers: (Deuteronomy 7:7-12).*

*And this is the confidence that we have in him, that, if we ask any thing according to his will, he heareth us: And if we know that he hear us, whatsoever we ask, we know that we have the petitions that we desired of him. (1 John 5:14-15).*

Why have Jews Suffered. (Chapter 14): *I am the Lord your God, which brought you forth out of*



*the land of Egypt, that ye should not be their bondmen; and I have broken the bands of your yoke, and made you go upright. But if ye will not hearken unto me, and will not do all these commandments; And if ye shall despise my statutes, or if your soul abhor my judgments, so that ye will not do all my commandments, but that ye break my covenant: I also will do this unto you; I will even appoint over you terror, consumption, and the burning ague (fever) (fever), that shall consume the eyes, and cause sorrow of heart: and ye shall sow your seed in vain, for your enemies shall eat it. And I will set my face against you, and ye shall be slain before your enemies: they that hate you shall reign over you; and ye shall flee when none pursueth you. And if ye will not yet for all this hearken unto me, then I will punish you seven times more for your sins. (Leviticus 26:13-18).*

*Moreover, brethren, I would not that ye should be ignorant, how that all our fathers were under the cloud, and all passed through the sea; And were all baptized unto Moses in the cloud and in the sea; And did all eat the same spiritual meat; And did all drink the same spiritual drink: for they drank of that spiritual Rock that followed them: and that Rock was Christ. But with many of them God was not well pleased: for they were overthrown in the wilderness. (1 Corinthians 10:1-5).*

Satan, the Enemy (Chapter 15): *O God, how long shall the adversary reproach? shall the enemy blaspheme thy name for ever? (Psalms 74:10).*

*Then saith Jesus unto him, Get thee hence, Satan: for it is written, Thou shalt worship the Lord thy God, and him only shalt thou serve. (Matthew 4:10).*

Summary and Conclusion (Chapter 16): This is the summary of all summaries: ***Jesus said unto him, Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy mind. This is the first and great commandment. And the second is like unto it, Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself. On these two commandments hang all the law and the prophets.*** (Matthew 22:37-40).

## CREATION VS. EVOLUTION

If we could only prove God! Maybe we can. Listen to this. “So, ladies and gentlemen of the jury, although the defense points out there were no eyewitnesses to the murder, they were not able to produce a credible alibi. We have demonstrated that the accused had plenty of time to get to the scene, haul the body away in his car, and throw it in the river, where we found it the next day. We found hair from the deceased in the accused’s trunk. He had a motive due to the large life insurance policy against the deceased that he tried to cash. In summary, even though there are no witnesses to the crime, no crime scene except where the body was found after it floated ashore, and no weapon, you must find the defendant guilty. He had means, motive, and opportunity.”

How would you like to be that guy? He’s about to go up the river. Who knows who did it? Maybe there is a good but overzealous DA, and poor defense council. Let us listen to the jury’s decision. “We the jury find the defendant with respect to the first count of murder in the first degree, guilty!” Yikes! Maybe these people just do not like the guy’s hairstyle. To find for first degree murder solely on circumstantial evidence! I am not sticking around to see if they give him the death penalty.

I would love to see a modern day Scopes trial that would allow circumstantial evidence. Now that was a tricky statement because everything the evolutionists have is circumstantial.

They have fossils, which are in the present, but they represent something that lived in the past. We do not know when the animal lived or why it died. Dating methods are unreliable. The test used is the one that fits the desired answer. In fact paleontology is that way. Dr. Gary Parker told me that while he still naively believed in evolution, he did not worry about proof. He is a paleontologist. He thought the geologists had all the proof. The geologists thought the biologists had it, and so on. The truth is, no one has the proof of evolution. Evolution was just a story without God.

“Ladies and gentlemen of the jury. Over the course of this trial, we will prove the existence of God. We will demonstrate, by showing similarities between all the species, of purpose, and that there had to be a designer. We will exhibit thousands of examples like the woodpecker showing that the features necessary to make them function all had to occur at once, not by time and chance. We will prove that the fossil record had to be covered quickly in order for the life forms to fossilize, and that the fossil record is the evidence of a worldwide flood; that Noah’s Flood caused the Ice Age; that fossil fuels can form in hundreds of years; the Big Bang violates the law of angular momentum. We will challenge the opposition by asking where the platypus came from; why the salt and sediment amounts in the ocean do not come close to their long ages model; why the fossil record is out of order in so many places. When we conclude our case, you will be convinced that all life was created by plan and purpose, by an almighty being, God. We will read His word to you, where He says He did this. And if that word is true, it all is true, because the Creator God says His word is true from the beginning.”

## SALVATION AND THE MESSIAH

The Messiah came to save us from our sins; that is, those that believe and accept Him. Here is God’s way for us:

SIN is disobedience to God. The first sin was the first disobedience. It occurred in the Garden of Eden: *The serpent said unto the woman (Eve), Yea, hath God said, Ye shall not eat of every tree of the garden? And the woman said unto the serpent, We may eat of the fruit of the trees of the garden: But of the fruit of the tree which is in the midst of the garden, God hath said, Ye shall not eat of it, neither shall ye touch it, lest ye die. And the serpent said unto the woman, in the day ye eat thereof, ye shall be as gods. And when the woman saw that the tree was good for food, she took of the fruit and did eat, and gave also unto her husband; and he did eat. And the Lord God called unto Adam, hast thou eaten of the tree, whereof I commanded thee that thou shouldest not eat? And the man said, The woman gave me of the tree, and I did eat. And the Lord God said unto the woman, I will greatly multiply thy sorrow and thy conception; in sorrow thou shalt bring forth children. And unto Adam he said, Because thou hast eaten of the tree, in sorrow shalt thou eat of it all the days of thy life; In the sweat of thy face shalt thou eat bread, till thou return unto the ground; for out of it wast thou taken: for dust thou art, and unto dust shalt thou return. So he drove out the man of the Garden of Eden.* (From Genesis 3.)

Unfortunately for us, God held us all accountable for First Sin. Does that sound fair? I remember in school, sometimes the entire class got in trouble because of a few bigmouths. This punishment for sin seems like the same thing. The difference, in school I never disagreed with the whole class getting in trouble because I was one of the bigmouths. Similarly, I am one of the sinners against God, so I am in familiar territory. Here is what the Bible says about us sinners: *“For all have sinned, and come short of the glory of God”* (Romans 3:23). *For the wages of sin*

*is death; but the gift of God is eternal life through Jesus Christ our Lord. (Romans 6:23.) Wherefore, as by one man sin entered into the world, and death by sin; and so death passed upon all men, for that all have sinned: (Romans 5:12.)*

**SAVED:** So now we know that everyone has sinned according to the Scriptures. This is what we need to be saved from, sin. But what if I do not sin? Do I need to be saved? What if a bunch of us get with lawyers and plea bargain with God? The Bible says all have sinned. There goes the first argument. Anyone that says he has not sinned is a liar! That violates commandment #9, which is also a sin. Further, with God all have sinned, even a brand new baby is born into sin. God is a Just God and must condemn us for our sins. And though we are condemned al-ready, God is a God of love and mercy and has provided a substitute to bear the burden of the penalty of our sins, that being His Son, the Lord Jesus. God provided a way for us to be saved.

**THE CONSEQUENCES OF NOT BEING SAVED:** *Not every one that saith unto me, Lord, Lord, shall enter into the kingdom of heaven. Many will say to me in that day, Lord, Lord, have we not prophesied in thy name? and in thy name have cast out devils? and in thy name done many wonderful works? And then will I profess unto them, I never knew you: depart from me, ye that work iniquity. (Matthew 7:21a-23).*

*But he that denieth me before men shall be denied before the angels of God. (Luke 12:9).*

*Heaven can be entered only through the narrow gate! The highway to hell is broad, and its gate is wide enough for all the multitudes who choose its easy way. (Matthew 7:13 LVB).*

*Keep far from a false charge, and do not slay the innocent and righteous, for I will not acquit the wicked. (Exodus 23:7 RSV).*

*But the fearful, and unbelieving, and abominable, and murderers, and whoremongers, and sorcerers, and idolaters, and all liars, shall have their part in the lake which burneth with fire and brimstone: which is the second death. (Revelation 21:8).*

**THE HOPE IN ONE THAT IS SAVED: Eternity with God:** *In my Father's house are many mansions: if it were not so, I would have told you. I go to prepare a place for you. And if I go and prepare a place for you, I will come again, and receive you unto myself; that where I am, there ye may be also. (John 14:2-3).*

**An eternal, immortal body:** *Behold, I shew you a mystery; We shall not all sleep, but we shall all be changed, In a moment, in the twinkling of an eye, at the last trump: for the trumpet shall sound, and the dead shall be raised incorruptible, and we shall be changed. For this corruptible must put on incorruption, and this mortal must put on immortality. (1 Corinthians 15:51-53).*

**Eternal reward:** *And I saw a new heaven and a new earth: for the first heaven and the first earth were passed away; and there was no more sea. And I John saw the holy city, new Jerusalem, coming down from God out of heaven, prepared as a bride adorned for her husband. And I heard a great voice out of heaven saying, Behold, the tabernacle of God is with men, and he will dwell with them, and they shall be his people, and God himself shall be with them, and be their God. And God shall wipe away all tears from their eyes; and there shall be no more death, neither sorrow, nor crying, neither shall there be any more pain: for the former things are passed away. He that overcometh shall inherit all things; and I will be his God, and he shall be my son. (Revelation 21:1-4, 7).*

**HOW TO BE SAVED:** When Jesus walked the earth, He taught the concept of sin, so the multitudes knew what sin was. Sin is simply disobeying God. Jesus told them they needed to be saved from their sins. They knew why they needed saved, but not how. When the Apostles Paul

and Silas were asked “How?” Sirs, what must I do to be saved? And they said, *Believe on the Lord Jesus Christ, and thou shalt be saved, and thy house.* (Acts 16:30b-31.)

The words of Jesus: *If I have told you earthly things, and ye believe not, how shall ye believe, if I tell you of heavenly things? And no man hath ascended up to heaven, but he that came down from heaven, even the Son of man which is in heaven. And as Moses lifted up the serpent in the wilderness, even so must the Son of man be lifted up: That whosoever believeth in him should not perish, but have eternal life. For God so loved the world, that he gave his only begotten Son, that whosoever believeth in him should not perish, but have everlasting life. For God sent not his Son into the world to condemn the world; but that the world through him might be saved. He that believeth on him is not condemned: but he that believeth not is condemned already, because he hath not believed in the name of the only begotten Son of God.* (John 3:12-18.)

*For the wages of sin is death; but the gift of God is eternal life through Jesus Christ our Lord.* (Romans 6:23).

*For by grace are ye saved through faith; and that not of yourselves: it is the gift of God: Not of works, lest any man should boast.* (Ephesians 2:8-9).

*Salvation from our sins is for anyone who will accept God’s gift. But as many as received him, to them gave he power to become the sons of God, even to them that believe on his name:* (John 1:12).

## TO ACCEPT JESUS AS YOUR SAVIOR

**Pray:** *“Dear Father in Heaven, I know I am a sinner. I am truly sorry for my sins. I repent and ask that you will forgive me. I accept Jesus as my Savior. From this day forward I will strive to live for Him. Dear Lord Jesus, please come into my heart. Amen.”*

## HOW WE LIVE

The following passage, Romans chapter 13, is edited from the New Jerusalem Bible:

### Submission to Civil Authority:

“Everyone is to obey the governing authorities, because there are no authorities except from God. God has appointed whatever authorities exist, so anyone who disobeys an authority is rebelling against God's ordinance; and rebels must expect to receive the condemnation they deserve. Magistrates do not bring fear to those who do good things, but only to those who do evil. So if you want to live with no fear of authority, live honestly and you will have its approval; it is there to serve God for you and for your good. But if you do wrong, then you may well be afraid; because it is not for nothing that the symbol of authority is the sword: it is there to serve God, too, as his avenger, to bring retribution to wrongdoers. You must be obedient, therefore, not only because of this retribution, but also for conscience's sake. And this is why you should pay taxes; too, because the authorities are all serving God as his agents, even while they are busily occupied with that particular task. Pay to each one what is due to each: taxes to the one to whom tax is due, tolls to the one to whom tolls are due, respect to the one to whom respect is due, honor to the one to whom honor is due.”

## Love and Law:

“The only thing you should owe to anyone is love for one another, for to love the other person is to fulfill the law. All these: You shall not commit adultery, You shall not kill, You shall not steal, You shall not covet, and all the other commandments that there are, are summed up in this single phrase: You must love your neighbour as yourself. Love can cause no harm to your neighbour, and so love is the fulfillment of the Law.”

## Children of the Light:

“Besides, you know the time has come; the moment is here for you to stop sleeping and wake up, because by now our salvation is nearer than when we first began to believe. The night is nearly over and daylight is on the way. Let us throw off everything that belongs to the darkness and equip us for the light. Let us live decently, as in the light of day, with no drunkenness licentiousness, and no wrangling or jealousy. Let your armor be the Lord Jesus Christ, and stop worrying about how your disordered natural inclinations may be fulfilled.”

God has told us what to believe. He has told us there is but one way to Him. He tells us in the book of Revelation what He likes in churches. His word is eternal. God called murder (abortion) a sin in the Old Testament, and He has not changed His mind. Have nothing to do with abortion.

Shun the homosexual act, lust, divorce, hate, and racism. None of these are of God, but are against God. If we are not for God, then we are against Him.

## ALCOHOL FOR MEDICINAL USE

Why are some Christians “Legalistic?” That is, they stress the need for abstinence from “earthly” substances and pleasures such as alcohol and tobacco. The Bible does not say one word about cigarettes. What about alcohol? Jesus drank wine. So what is the basis for Christians to tell us to avoid the sins of alcohol and tobacco?

Alcohol was used by “Bible heroes” from Noah through Jesus, though in some cases quite a bit of trouble was raised by drunken heroes. Medical reports indicate that some alcohol is actually good for the heart. Tobacco users believe that nicotine calms them down. What is the problem?

Nicotine and alcohol are now recognized as drugs. They are chemical substances. Both are addicting. Though a *little* alcohol might be beneficial to one’s heart, every ounce kills millions of brain cells. Not to worry, you will grow them back. You might also grow fatal diseases. You will definitely grow into a stumbling block. Imagine someone listening as a drunk tells about how God has made his life complete. Tobacco can kill everything else that was not killed by the alcohol.

Peter summarizes the proper attitude toward alcohol and tobacco (as well as other “recreational” drugs): *For the time past of our life may suffice us to have wrought the will of the Gentiles, when we walked in lasciviousness, lusts, excess of wine, revellings, banquetings, and abominable idolatries: Wherein they think it strange that ye run not with them to the same excess of riot, speaking evil of you: Who shall give account to him that is ready to judge the quick and the dead.* (1 Peter 4:3-5.)

We must separate ourselves from the world in order to be a witness to the world. This is

why Christians are legalistic. It is not prudence for prudence' sake.

## CLOSING

God has promised a glorious afterlife for some, eternal punishment for others. In His Word He tells us how easy it is to find eternal life, yet for many this seemingly easy gift is difficult to accept. Why? Do it! Hear the Lord, and use your free will to accept His free gift. Be willing to suffer for God. Christ willingly suffered for you. Our time on earth is a fleeting moment out of eternity. Do not let pride or hardness of heart cause you eternal turmoil.

Our adversary the devil will do all he can to keep you from God. He will do all he can to keep you from witnessing to others. God is Love, Satan is hate. Be victorious over him. As if Satan is not bad enough, we are our own enemy. Satan gave us a push, but we did a lot on our own. How powerful the human mind must be to have everything this screwed up.

Dr. Gary Parker has left Answers in Genesis to pursue related interests. Dr. Parker notes "Psalms 19:1-4" beneath his autograph:

<sup>1</sup>The heavens declare the glory of God; and the firmament sheweth his handywork. <sup>2</sup>Day unto day uttereth speech, and night unto night sheweth knowledge. <sup>3</sup>There is no speech nor language, where their voice is not heard. <sup>4</sup>Their line is gone out through all the earth, and their words to the end of the world. In them hath he set a tabernacle for the sun.

That scripture offers powerful spiritual evidence for a Creator-God and a creation by God. Do not turn your back on God and His word. And do not wait a moment. You do not know when you will die, but it could be very sudden and unexpected. Accept Jesus as your Savior now.

Pray, "Dear Father in Heaven, the universe and life in it show you are real and true. Your word is then also true. According to your word, I know that I am a sinner and destined to pay with death. But I believe that you sent your son Jesus to die for me and for the redemption of my sins if I will accept this gift. I accept Jesus into my heart and life as my Personal Savior. Thank you Lord for saving me. Please guide me as I begin my endeavor to live for you. In Jesus name I ask these things, Amen."

And we know that all things work together for good to them that love God, to them who are the called according to his purpose. (Romans 8:28)

Writing this book for you and for God has been a glorious opportunity. It is the fruit of my love for God's Chosen People. May you find the Messiah, Salvation, and see me in Heaven.

Harold A. Lerch, Sr. P.E.

*And the peace of God, which passeth all understanding, shall keep your hearts and minds through Christ Jesus. Phillipians 4:7*



## Appendix A

### BIBLICAL CREATIONISM & EVOLUTION

<sup>1</sup>In the beginning God created the heaven and the earth. <sup>2a</sup>And the earth was without form, and void; and darkness was upon the face of the deep. <sup>3</sup>And God said, Let there be light: and there was light. <sup>5</sup>And God called the light Day, and the darkness He called Night. And the evening and the morning were the first day.

<sup>7a</sup>And God made the firmament. <sup>8</sup>And God called the firmament Heaven. And the evening and the morning were the second day.

<sup>9a</sup>And God said, Let the waters under the heavens be gathered together. <sup>10</sup>And God called the dry land Earth; and the gathering together of the waters called He Seas. <sup>11a</sup>And God said, Let the earth bring forth vegetation. <sup>13</sup>And the evening and the morning were the third day.

<sup>14</sup>And God said, Let there be lights in the firmament of the heaven to divide the day from the night; and let them be for signs, and for seasons, and for days, and years; <sup>16</sup>And God made two great lights; the greater light to rule the day, and the lesser light to rule the night: he made the stars also. <sup>17a</sup>And God set them in the firmament <sup>18a</sup>to rule over the day and over the night. <sup>19</sup>And the evening and the morning were the fourth day.

<sup>20a</sup>And God said, Let the waters bring forth abundantly the moving creature that hath life, and fowl that may fly above the earth. <sup>21a</sup>And God created great sea monsters, and every living creature that moveth, which the waters brought forth abundantly, after their kind, and every winged fowl after its kind. <sup>22a</sup>And God blessed them and said, Be fruitful and multiply. <sup>23</sup>And the evening and the morning were the fifth day.

<sup>24a</sup>And God said, Let the earth bring forth the living creature after its kind, cattle, and creeping things. <sup>26a</sup>And God said, Let us make man in our image, after our likeness; and let them have dominion...over the earth. <sup>27</sup>So God created man in His own image, in the image of God created He him; male and female created he them. <sup>29a,c</sup>And God said, Behold, I have given you every

herb...and fruit... for food. <sup>30a,c</sup>And to every beast...and fowl...and thing that creepeth...wherein there is life, I have given every green herb for food. <sup>31b</sup>And the evening and the morning were the sixth day.

<sup>2</sup>And on the seventh day God ended his work which he had made; and he rested on the seventh day from all his work which he had made. <sup>3a</sup>And God blessed the seventh day, and sanctified it. (Genesis Chapter 1, Genesis 2:2-3a)

Day 1. Created the heavens, earth, and light. (And time!)

Day 2. Divided the waters, firmament above, water (liquid) below.

Day 3. Divided the dry land from the seas. Created plant life.

Day 4. Created the sun, moon, and stars.

Day 5. Created sea life and birds.

Day 6. Created land animals including dinosaurs. Created man to be fruitful, fill the earth, and subdue it.

Day 7. After the sixth day, God saw that His creation was very good. He rested on the seventh day from his work and sanctified it.

SUNKEN CITIES And Adah bare Jabal: he was the father of such as dwell in tents, and of such as have cattle. And his brother's name was Jubal: he was the father of all such as handle the harp and organ. And Zillah, she also bare Tubalcain, an instructor of every artificer in brass and iron: and the sister of Tubalcain was Naamah. Gen. 4:17, 20-22.

According to Genesis 5:4, Adam and Eve had many children: And the days of Adam after he had begotten Seth were eight hundred years: and he begat sons and daughters. Cain's wife was most likely his sister.

This world judgment was brought on by sin (Genesis 6:6-7) "And it repented the Lord that he had made man on the earth, and it grieved him at his heart. And the Lord said, I will destroy man whom I have created from the face of the earth; both man, and beast, and the creeping thing, and

the fowls of the air; for it repenteth me that I have made them.” But Noah found grace in the eyes of the Lord (verse 8).

**SIZE OF THE ARK:** Make thee an ark of gopher wood; rooms shalt thou make in the ark, and shalt pitch it within and without with pitch. And this is the fashion which thou shalt make it of: The length of the ark shall be three hundred cubits (450 feet), the breadth of it fifty cubits (75 feet), and the height of it thirty cubits (45 feet). A window shalt thou make to the ark, and in a cubit shalt thou finish it above; and the door of the ark shalt thou set in the side thereof; with lower, second, and third stories (3 stories high) shalt thou make it. Gen:6:14-16. (The three stories totaled over 100,000 square feet! More than two football fields.)

In the six hundredth year of Noah's life, in the second month, the seventeenth day of the month, the same day were all the fountains of the great deep broken up, and the windows of heaven were opened. Gen. 7:11.

<sup>1</sup>Now these are the generations of the sons of Noah, Shem, Ham, and Japheth: and unto them were sons born after the flood.

<sup>2</sup>The sons of Japheth; Gomer, and Magog, and Madai, and Javan, and Tubal, and Meshech, and Tiras. <sup>3</sup>And the sons of Gomer; Ashkenaz, and Riphath, and Togarmah. <sup>4</sup>And the sons of Javan; Elishah, and Tarshish, Kittim, and Dodanim. <sup>5</sup>By these were the isles of the Gentiles divided in their lands; every one after his tongue, after their families, in their nations.

<sup>6</sup>And the sons of Ham; Cush, and Mizraim, and Phut, and Canaan. <sup>7</sup>And the sons of Cush; Seba, and Havilah, and Sabtah, and Raamah, and Sabtechah; and the sons of Raamah, Sheba, and Dedan. <sup>8</sup>And Cush begat Nimrod: he began to be a mighty one in the earth. <sup>9</sup>He was a mighty hunter before the Lord: wherefore it is said, Even as Nimrod the mighty hunter before the Lord. <sup>10</sup>And the beginning of his kingdom was Babel, and Erech, and Accad, and Calneh, in the land of

Shinar. <sup>11</sup>Out of that land went forth Asshur, and builded Nineveh, and the city Rehoboth, and Calah, <sup>12</sup>And Resen between Nineveh and Calah: the same is a great city. <sup>13</sup>And Mizraim begat Ludim, and Anamim, and Lehabim, and Naphtuhim, <sup>14</sup>And Pathrusim, and Casluhim, (out of whom came Philistim,) and Caphtorim. <sup>15</sup>And Canaan begat Sidon his firstborn, and Heth, <sup>16</sup>And the Jebusite, and the Amorite, and the Girgasite, <sup>17</sup>And the Hivite, and the Arkite, and the Sinite, <sup>18</sup>And the Arvadite, and the Zemarite, and the Hamathite: and afterward were the families of the Canaanites spread abroad. <sup>19</sup>And the border of the Canaanites was from Sidon, as thou comest to Gerar, unto Gaza; as thou goest, unto Sodom, and Gomorrah, and Admah, and Zeboim, even unto Lasha. <sup>20</sup>These are the sons of Ham, after their families, after their tongues, in their countries, and in their nations.

<sup>21</sup>Unto Shem also, the father of all the children of Eber, the brother of Japheth the elder, even to him were children born. <sup>22</sup>The children of Shem; Elam, and Asshur, and Arphaxad, and Lud, and Aram. <sup>23</sup>And the children of Aram; Uz, and Hul, and Gether, and Mash. <sup>24</sup>And Arphaxad begat Salah; and Salah begat Eber. <sup>25</sup>And unto Eber were born two sons: the name of one was Peleg; for in his days was the earth divided; and his brother's name was Joktan. <sup>26</sup>And Joktan begat Almodad, and Sheleph, and Hazarmaveth, and Jerah, <sup>27</sup>And Hadoram, and Uzal, and Diklah, <sup>28</sup>And Obal, and Abimael, and Sheba, <sup>29</sup>And Ophir, and Havilah, and Jobab: all these were the sons of Joktan. <sup>30</sup>And their dwelling was from Mesha, as thou goest unto Sephar a mount of the east. <sup>31</sup>These are the sons of Shem, after their families, after their tongues, in their lands, after their nations.

<sup>32</sup>These are the families of the sons of Noah, after their generations, in their nations: and by these were the nations divided in the earth after the flood. (Genesis 10)

**THE DAYS OF PELEG:** And unto Eber were born two sons: the name of one was Peleg; for (because) in his days was the earth divided;



[Peleg- literally, division] (Genesis 10:25; 1 Chronicles 1:19)

SIN & CONFOUNDED LANGUAGE: <sup>1</sup>And the whole earth was of one language, and of one speech. <sup>2</sup>And it came to pass, as they journeyed...they found a plain...and they dwelt there. <sup>3</sup>And they said one to another, Go to, let us make brick, and...mortar. <sup>4</sup>And they said, Go to, let us build us a city and a tower, whose top may reach unto heaven; and let us make us a name, lest we be scattered abroad upon the face of the whole earth. <sup>5</sup>And the Lord came down to see the city and the tower, which the children of men builded. <sup>6</sup>And the Lord said, Behold, the people is one, and they have all one language; and this they begin to do: and now nothing will be restrained from them, which they have imagined to do. <sup>7</sup>Go to, let us go down, and there confound their language, that they may not understand one another's speech. <sup>8</sup>So the Lord scattered them abroad from thence upon the face of all the earth: and they left off to build the city. <sup>9</sup>Therefore is the name of it called Babel; because the Lord did there confound the language of all the earth: and from thence did the Lord scatter them abroad upon the face of all the earth. (Genesis 11:1-9)

Thou, even thou, art Lord alone; thou hast made heaven, the heaven of heavens, with all their host, the earth, and all things that are therein, the seas, and all that is therein, and thou preservest them all; and the host of heaven worshippeth thee. (Nehemiah 9:6).

But ask the beasts, and they will teach you; the birds of the air, and they will tell you; or the plants of the earth, and they will teach you; and the fish of the sea will declare to you. Who among all these does not know that the hand of the Lord has done this? In his hand is the life of every living thing and the breath of all mankind. Job 12:7-10 RSV.

THE EARTH IS HANGING IN SPACE. He stretcheth out the north over the empty place, and hangeth the earth upon nothing. (Job 26:7).

DINOSAURS: One of the sauropods? “Lo, now, (Behemoth’s) strength is in his loins, and his force is in the muscles of his belly. He moveth his tail like a cedar. His bones are like bars of iron. He is the chief of the ways of God. Behold he drinketh up a river, and hasteneth not. (Job 40:15-19, 23).

DINOSAURS: PERHAPS T. REX? “Canst thou draw out Leviathan with a hook? Canst thou fill his skin with barbed irons, or his head with fish spears? None is so fierce that dares stir him up; I will not conceal his parts, nor his power, nor his comely proportion. His teeth are terrible round about. His scales are his pride. By his sneezings a light doth shine. Out of his mouth go burning lamps, and sparks of fire leap out. Out of his nostrils goeth smoke. His breath kindleth coals, and a flame goeth out of his mouth. When he raiseth up himself, the mighty are afraid. Upon earth there is not his like, who is made without fear. (Job 41: 1, 7, 10, 12, 14-15, 18-21, 25, 33).

The heavens declare the glory of God; and the firmament sheweth his handywork. Day unto day uttereth speech, and night unto night sheweth knowledge. There is no speech nor language, where their voice is not heard. Their line is gone out through all the earth, and their words to the end of the world. In them hath he set a tabernacle for the sun. (Psalms 19:1-4).

By the word of the Lord were the heavens made; and all the host of them by the breath of his mouth. He gathereth the waters of the sea together as an heap: he layeth up the depth in storehouses. Let all the earth fear the Lord: let all the inhabitants of the world stand in awe of him. For he spake, and it was done; he commanded, and it stood fast. Psalms 33:6-9).

WHERE DID THE WATER GO? HOW COULD IT COVER THE HIGHEST MOUNTAIN? Well, who knows how high the tallest mountains were before the flood. God inspired David to write these verses: You clothed the earth with floods of waters covering up the mountains. You spoke, and at the sound of your shout the water collected into its vast ocean beds, and mountains rose and

valleys sank to the levels you decreed. And then you set a boundary for the seas, so that they would never again cover the earth. Psalms 104:6-9 Living Bible.

He has made everything beautiful in its time; also he has put eternity into man's mind.  
Ecclesiastes 3:11a RSV

<sup>12</sup>How art thou fallen from heaven, O Lucifer, son of the morning! how art thou cut down to the ground, which didst weaken the nations! <sup>13</sup>For thou hast said in thine heart, I will ascend into heaven, I will exalt my throne above the stars of God: I will sit also upon the mount of the congregation, in the sides of the north: <sup>14</sup>I will ascend above the heights of the clouds; I will be like the most High. <sup>15</sup>Yet thou shalt be brought down to hell, to the sides of the pit. (Isaiah 14:12-16)

Lord of hosts, God of Israel, that dwellest between the Cherubims, thou art the God, even thou alone, of all the kingdoms of the earth: thou hast made heaven and earth. (Isaiah 37:16).

THE BIBLE SAYS THE WORLD IS ROUND. It is he that sitteth upon the circle of the earth, and the inhabitants thereof are as grasshoppers; that stretcheth out the heavens as a curtain, and spreadeth them out as a tent to dwell in: (Isaiah 40:22).

I have made the earth, and created man upon it: I, even my hands, have stretched out the heavens, and all their host have I commanded. (Isaiah 45:12).

Ah Lord God! behold, thou hast made the heaven and the earth by thy great power and stretched out arm, and there is nothing too hard for thee: Jeremiah 32:17).

And hath made of one blood all nations of men to dwell on all the face of the earth (Acts 17:26)

<sup>3</sup>Knowing this first, that there shall come in the last days scoffers, walking after their own lusts,

<sup>4</sup>And saying, Where is the promise of his coming? for since the fathers fell asleep, all things continue as they were from the beginning of the creation. <sup>5</sup>For this they willingly are ignorant of, that by the word of God the heavens were of old, and the earth standing out of the water and in the water: <sup>6</sup>Whereby the world that then was, being overflowed with water, perished: <sup>7</sup>But the heavens and the earth, which are now, by the same word are kept in store, reserved unto fire against the day of judgment and perdition of ungodly men. (2 Peter 3:3-7.

Thou art worthy, O Lord, to receive glory and honour and power: for thou hast created all things, and for thy pleasure they are and were created. (Revelation 4:11.)

<sup>14</sup>And Enoch also, the seventh from Adam, prophesied of these, saying, Behold, the Lord cometh with ten thousands of his saints, <sup>15</sup>To execute judgment upon all, and to convince all that are ungodly among them of all their ungodly deeds which they have ungodly committed, and of all their hard speeches which ungodly sinners have spoken against him. <sup>16</sup>These are murmurers, complainers, walking after their own lusts; and their mouth speaketh great swelling words, having men's persons in admiration because of advantage. <sup>17</sup>But, beloved, remember ye the words which were spoken before of the apostles of our Lord Jesus Christ; <sup>18</sup>How that they told you there should be mockers in the last time, who should walk after their own ungodly lusts. <sup>19</sup>These be they who separate themselves, sensual, having not the spirit. (Jude 1:14-20)

## Appendix B

### THE MESSIAH AND HIS PURPOSE

In the beginning, there was one simple commandment for us to obey: (of the fruit of the tree which is in the midst of the garden, God hath said, Ye shall not eat of it (Gen. 3:3).

Even so, God loves us: And when Abram was ninety years old and nine, the Lord appeared to Abram, and said unto him, I am the Almighty God; walk before me, and be thou perfect. And I will make my covenant between me and thee, and will multiply thee exceedingly. (Genesis 17:1-2).

MESSIAH A DESCENDENT OF ABRAHAM: And I will establish my covenant between me and thee and thy seed after thee in their generations for an everlasting covenant, to be a God unto thee, and to thy seed after thee. Genesis 17:7.

And in thy seed shall all the nations of the earth be blessed; because thou hast obeyed my voice. Genesis 22:18.

Now to Abraham and his seed were the promises made. He saith not, And to seeds, as of many; but as of one, And to thy seed, which is Christ. Galatians 3:16.

MESSIAH A DESCENDENT OF ISAAC: And God said unto Abraham, Let it not be grievous in thy sight because of the lad, and because of thy bondwoman; in all that Sarah hath said unto thee, hearken unto her voice; for in Isaac shall thy seed be called. And also of the son of the bondwoman will I make a nation, because he is thy seed. Genesis 21:12-13.

By faith Abraham, when he was tried, offered up Isaac: and he that had received the promises offered up his only begotten son, Of whom it was said, That in Isaac shall thy seed be called: Accounting that God was able to raise him up, even from the dead; from whence also he received him in a figure. Hebrews 11:17-17.

MESSIAH TO ESTABLISH KINGDOM ON EARTH: The sceptre shall not depart from Judah,

nor a lawgiver from between his feet, until Shiloh come; and unto him shall the gathering of the people be. Genesis 49:10.

Seventy weeks are determined upon thy people and upon thy holy city, to finish the transgression, and to make an end of sins, and to make reconciliation for iniquity, and to bring in everlasting righteousness, and to seal up the vision and prophecy, and to anoint the most Holy. Know therefore and understand, that from the going forth of the commandment to restore and to build Jerusalem unto the Messiah the Prince shall be seven weeks, and threescore and two weeks: the street shall be built again, and the wall, even in troublous times. Daniel 9:24-25.

For all these things must come to pass, but the end is not yet. For nation shall rise against nation, and kingdom against kingdom: and there shall be famines, and pestilences, and earthquakes, in divers places. All these are the beginning of sorrows. Then shall they deliver you up to be afflicted, and shall kill you: and ye shall be hated of all nations for my name's sake. And then shall many be offended, and shall betray one another, and shall hate one another. And many false prophets shall rise, and shall deceive many. And because iniquity shall abound, the love of many shall wax cold. But he that shall endure unto the end, the same shall be saved. When ye therefore shall see the abomination of desolation, spoken of by Daniel the prophet, stand in the holy place. From Matthew 24: 6-15.

MESSIAH'S CRUCIFIXION: NOT A BONE SHALL BE BROKEN: In one house shall it be eaten; thou shalt not carry forth ought of the flesh abroad out of the house; neither shall ye break a bone thereof. Exodus 12:46.

Then came the soldiers, and brake the legs of the first, and of the other which was crucified with him. But when they came to Jesus, and saw that he was dead already, they brake not his legs: For these things were done, that the scripture should be fulfilled, A bone of him shall not be broken. John 19: 32-33, 36.

And Moses said unto the people, Fear ye not, stand still, and see the salvation of the Lord, which

he will shew to you to day: for the Egyptians whom ye have seen to day, ye shall see them again no more for ever. The Lord shall fight for you, and ye shall hold your peace. (Exodus 14:13-14).

For thou shalt worship no other god: for the Lord, whose name is Jealous, is a jealous God: (Exodus 34:14)

And thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thine heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy might (Deuteronomy 6:5).

Know therefore that the Lord thy God, He is God, the faithful God, which keepeth covenant and mercy with them that love Him and keep His commandments to a thousand generations; (Deuteronomy 7:9)

MESSIAH WILL BE A JEW: The Lord thy God will raise up unto thee a Prophet from the midst of thee, of thy brethren, like unto me; unto him ye shall hearken; According to all that thou desiredst of the Lord thy God in Horeb in the day of the assembly, saying, Let me not hear again the voice of the Lord my God, neither let me see this great fire any more, that I die not. And the Lord said unto me, They have well spoken that which they have spoken. I will raise them up a Prophet from among their brethren, like unto thee, and will put my words in his mouth; and he shall speak unto them all that I shall command him. Deuteronomy 18:15-18.

And he shall send Jesus Christ, which before was preached unto you: Whom the heaven must receive until the times of restitution of all things, which God hath spoken by the mouth of all his holy prophets since the world began. For Moses truly said unto the fathers, A prophet shall the Lord your God raise up unto you of your brethren, like unto me; him shall ye hear in all things whatsoever he shall say unto you. Acts 3:20-22.

For the Lord your God is he that goeth with you, to fight for you against your enemies, to save you. (Deuteronomy 20:4).

Be strong and of a good courage, fear not, nor be

afraid of them: for the Lord thy God, he it is that doth go with thee; he will not fail thee, nor forsake thee. (Deuteronomy 31:6).

If ye forsake the Lord, and serve strange gods, then he will turn and do you hurt, and consume you, after that he hath done you good. (Joshua 24:20).

I will call on the Lord, who is worthy to be praised: so shall I be saved from mine enemies. (2 Samuel 22:4).

And thou, Solomon my son, know thou the God of thy father, and serve him with a perfect heart and with a willing mind: for the Lord searcheth all hearts, and understandeth all the imaginations of the thoughts: if thou seek him, he will be found of thee; but if thou forsake him, he will cast thee off for ever. (1 Chronicles 28:9).

Thus saith the Lord unto you, Be not afraid nor dismayed by reason of this great multitude; for the battle is not yours, but God's. (2 Chronicles 20:15b).

And said, I beseech thee, O Lord God of heaven, the great and terrible God, that keepeth covenant and mercy for them that love him and observe his commandments: (Nehemiah 1:5).

ETERNAL LIFE: <sup>25</sup>For I know that my redeemer liveth, and that he shall stand at the latter day upon the earth: <sup>26</sup>And though after my skin worms destroy this body, yet in my flesh shall I see God: <sup>27</sup>Whom I shall see for myself, and mine eyes shall behold, and not another; though my reins be consumed within me. <sup>28</sup>But ye should say, Why persecute we him, seeing the root of the matter is found in me? <sup>29</sup>Be ye afraid of the sword: for wrath bringeth the punishments of the sword, that ye may know there is a judgment. (Job 19:25-29).

He, Shaddai (the Almighty), is far beyond our reach. Supreme in power, in equity, excelling in saving justice, yet no oppressor, (Job 37:23 NJB).

MESSIAH SCORNE: Why do the heathen rage, and the people imagine a vain thing? The kings of

the earth set themselves, and the rulers take counsel together, against the Lord, and against his anointed, saying, Let us break their bands asunder, and cast away their cords from us. Psalms 2:1-3.

And when they heard that, they lifted up their voice to God with one accord, and said, Lord, thou art God, which hast made heaven, and earth, and the sea, and all that in them is: Who by the mouth of thy servant David hast said, Why did the heathen rage, and the people imagine vain things? The kings of the earth stood up, and the rulers were gathered together against the Lord, and against his Christ. For of a truth against thy holy child Jesus, whom thou hast anointed, both Herod, and Pontius Pilate, with the Gentiles, and the people of Israel, were gathered together, For to do whatsoever thy hand and thy counsel determined before to be done. Acts 4:24-28.

**GOD DECLARES MESSIAH AS SON OF GOD:** Yet have I set my king upon my holy hill of Zion. I will declare the decree: the Lord hath said unto me, Thou art my son; this day have I begotten thee. Psalms 2:6-7.

And, behold, thou shalt conceive in thy womb, and bring forth a son, and shalt call his name Jesus. He shall be great, and shall be called the Son of the Highest: and the Lord God shall give unto him the throne of his father David: And he shall reign over the house of Jacob for ever; and of his kingdom there shall be no end. Luke 1:31-33.

**ON THE CROSS, GOD TURNED HIS BACK ON THE SIN CHRIST TOOK ON:** My God, my God, why hast thou forsaken me? why art thou so far from helping me, and from the words of my roaring? I am poured out like water, and all my bones are out of joint: my heart is like wax; it is melted in the midst of my bowels. My strength is dried up like a potsherd; and my tongue cleaveth to my jaws; and thou hast brought me into the dust of death. Psalms 22:1, 14, 15.

And about the ninth hour Jesus cried with a loud voice, saying, Eli, Eli, lama sabachthani? that is to say, My God, my God, why hast thou forsaken me? Matthew 27:46.

**SCORNE**D ON THE CROSS: All they that see

me laugh me to scorn: they shoot out the lip, they shake the head, saying, He trusted on the Lord that he would deliver him: let him deliver him, seeing he delighted in him. Psalms 22:7-8.

And they that passed by reviled him, wagging their heads, And saying, Thou that destroyest when Joseph had taken the body, he wrapped it in a clean linen cloth, And laid it in his own new tomb, which he had hewn out in the rock: and he rolled a great stone to the door of the sepulchre, and departed. Matthew 27:57-60.

In re v. 12: Jesus, when he had cried again with a loud voice, yielded up the ghost. Matthew 27:50.

In re v. 12: Then said Jesus, Father, forgive them; for they know not what they do. And they parted his raiment, and cast lots. Luke 23:34.

**PIERCED WITH NAILS ON CRUCIFIX:** For dogs have compassed me: the assembly of the wicked have inclosed me: they pierced my hands and my feet. Psalms 22:16.

But Thomas, one of the twelve, called Didymus, was not with them when Jesus came. The other disciples therefore said unto him, We have seen the Lord. But he said unto them, Except I shall see in his hands the print of the nails, and put my finger into the print of the nails, and thrust my hand into his side, I will not believe. John 20:24-25.

The Lord redeemeth the soul of his servants: and none of them that trust in him shall be desolate. (Psalms 34:22).

**RIGHTEOUS JUDGE:** Thy throne, O God, is for ever and ever: the sceptre of thy kingdom is a right sceptre. Thou lovest righteousness, and hatest wickedness: therefore God, thy God, hath anointed thee with the oil of gladness above thy fellows. Psalms 45:6-7.

I can of mine own self do nothing: as I hear, I judge: and my judgment is just; because I seek not mine own will, but the will of the Father which hath sent me. John 5:30.

And I saw heaven opened, and behold a white horse; and he that sat upon him was called Faithful and True, and in righteousness he doth judge and make war. Revelation 19:11.

**BETRAYED BY HIS OWN:** For it was not an enemy that reproached me; then I could have borne it: neither was it he that hated me that did magnify himself against me; then I would have hid myself from him: But it was thou, a man mine equal, my guide, and mine acquaintance. We took sweet counsel together, and walked unto the house of God in company. Psalms 55:12-14.

I speak not of you all: I know whom I have chosen: but that the scripture may be fulfilled, He that eateth bread with me hath lifted up his heel against me. When Jesus had thus said, he was troubled in spirit, and testified, and said, Verily, verily, I say unto you, that one of you shall betray me. John 13:18, 21.

Through God we shall do valiantly: for he it is that shall tread down our enemies. (Psalms 60:12).

My soul, wait thou only upon God; for my expectation is from him. He only is my rock and my salvation: he is my defence; I shall not be moved. In God is my salvation and my glory: the rock of my strength, and my refuge, is in God. (Psalms 62:5-7).

**JESUS ANGERED BY GREED AT THE TEMPLE:** I am become a stranger unto my brethren, and an alien unto my mother's children. For the zeal of thine house hath eaten me up; and the reproaches of them that reproached thee are fallen upon me. Psalms 69:8-9.

And his disciples remembered that it was written, The zeal of thine house hath eaten me up. John 2:17.

**TREATED INDIGNANTLY ON THE CROSS:** Reproach hath broken my heart; and I am full of heaviness: and I looked for some to take pity, but there was none; and for comforters, but I found none. They gave me also gall for my meat; and in my thirst they gave me vinegar to drink. Psalms 69:20-21.

They gave him vinegar to drink mingled with gall: and when he had tasted thereof, he would not drink. And they crucified him, and parted his garments, casting lots: that it might be fulfilled which was spoken by the prophet, They parted my

garments among them, and upon my vesture did they cast lots. Matthew 27:34-35.

**ALL SHALL KNOW HE IS GOD:** The kings of Tarshish and of the isles shall bring presents: the kings of Sheba and Seba shall offer gifts. Yea, all kings shall fall down before him: all nations shall serve him. Psalms 72:10-11.

Now when Jesus was born in Bethlehem of Judaea in the days of Herod the king, behold, there came wise men from the east to Jerusalem, Saying, Where is he that is born King of the Jews? for we have seen his star in the east, and are come to worship him. Matthew 2:1-2.

**MESSIAH TO TEACH IN PARABLES:** Give ear, O my people, to my law: incline your ears to the words of my mouth. I will open my mouth in a parable: I will utter dark sayings of old: Psalms 78:1-2.

All these things spake Jesus unto the multitude in parables; and without a parable spake he not unto them: That it might be fulfilled which was spoken by the prophet, saying, I will open my mouth in parables; I will utter things which have been kept secret from the foundation of the world. Matthew 13:34-35.

Rejoice the soul of thy servant: for unto thee, O Lord, do I lift up my soul. For thou, Lord, art good, and ready to forgive; and plenteous in mercy unto all them that call upon thee. (Psalms 86:4-5).

He hath remembered His covenant forever, the word which He commanded to a thousand generations. (Psalms 105:8)

**MESSIAH TO RULE AT RIGHT HAND OF GOD:** The Lord said unto my Lord, Sit thou at my right hand, until I make thine enemies thy footstool. Psalms 110:1.

God, who at sundry times and in divers manners spake in time past unto the fathers by the prophets, Hath in these last days spoken unto us by his Son, whom he hath appointed heir of all things, by whom also he made the worlds; Who being the brightness of his glory, and the express image of his person, and upholding all things by the word of

his power, when he had by himself purged our sins, sat down on the right hand of the Majesty on high; Hebrews 1:1-3.

**PRIEST FOREVER:** The Lord hath sworn, and will not repent, Thou art a priest for ever after the order of Melchizedek. Psalms 110:4.

So also Christ glorified not himself to be made an high priest; but he that said unto him, Thou art my Son, to day have I begotten thee. As he saith also in another place, Thou art a priest for ever after the order of Melchisedec. Hebrews 5:5-6.

**HEAD OF THE CHURCH:** The stone which the builders refused is become the head stone of the corner. Psalms 118:22.

Jesus saith unto them, Did ye never read in the scriptures, The stone which the builders rejected, the same is become the head of the corner: this is the Lord's doing, and it is marvellous in our eyes? Matthew 21:42.

<sup>89</sup>For ever, O Lord, thy word is settled in heaven.

<sup>90</sup>Thy faithfulness is unto all generations: thou hast established the earth, and it abideth. <sup>160</sup>Thy word is true from the beginning: and every one of thy righteous judgments endureth for ever. (Psalms 119:89,90,160)

**DESCENDENT OF DAVID:** The Lord hath sworn in truth unto David; he will not turn from it; Of the fruit of thy body will I set upon thy throne. Psalms 132:11.

Behold, the days come, saith the Lord, that I will raise unto David a righteous Branch, and a King shall reign and prosper, and shall execute judgment and justice in the earth. Jeremiah 23:5.

And when he had removed him, he raised up unto them David to be their king; to whom also he gave testimony, and said, I have found David the son of Jesse, a man after mine own heart, which shall fulfil all my will. Of this man's seed hath God according to his promise raised unto Israel a Saviour, Jesus: Acts 13:22-23.

Concerning his Son Jesus Christ our Lord, which was made of the seed of David according to the flesh; Romans 1:3.

**MESSIAH SHALL RISE TO RULE WITH GOD:** Therefore my heart is glad, and my glory rejoiceth: my flesh also shall rest in hope. For thou wilt not leave my soul in hell; neither wilt thou suffer thine Holy One to see corruption. Psalms 16:9-10.

Men and brethren, let me freely speak unto you of the patriarch David, that he is both dead and buried, and his sepulchre is with us unto this day. Therefore being a prophet, and knowing that God had sworn with an oath to him, that of the fruit of his loins, according to the flesh, he would raise up Christ to sit on his throne; He seeing this before spake of the resurrection of Christ, that his soul was not left in hell, neither his flesh did see corruption. Acts 2:29-31.

Many are the plans in the mind of a man, but it is the purpose of the Lord that will be established. (Proverbs 19:21 RSV).

**VIRGIN BIRTH OF MESSIAH:** Therefore the Lord himself shall give you a sign; Behold, a virgin shall conceive, and bear a son, and shall call his name Immanuel. Isaiah 7:14.

When as his mother Mary was espoused to Joseph, before they came together, she was found with child of the Holy Ghost. Then Joseph her husband, being a just man, and not willing to make her a publick example, was minded to put her away privily. But while he thought on these things, behold, the angel of the Lord appeared unto him in a dream, saying, Joseph, thou son of David, fear not to take unto thee Mary thy wife: for that which is conceived in her is of the Holy Ghost. Matthew 1:18-20.

**WORTHY:** Sanctify the Lord of hosts himself; and let him be your fear, and let him be your dread. And he shall be for a sanctuary; but for a stone of stumbling and for a rock of offence to both the houses of Israel, for a gin (trap) and for a snare to the inhabitants of Jerusalem. Isaiah 8:13-14.

But Israel, which followed after the law of righteousness, hath not attained to the law of righteousness. Wherefore? Because they sought it not by faith, but as it were by the works of the law. For they stumbled at that stumblingstone; As it is

written, Behold, I lay in Sion a stumblingstone and rock of offence: and whosoever believeth on him shall not be ashamed. Romans 9:31-33.

A WITNESS TO THE GENTILES, TOO: Nevertheless the dimness shall not be such as was in her vexation, when at the first he lightly afflicted the land of Zebulun and the land of Naphtali, and afterward did more grievously afflict her by the way of the sea, beyond Jordan, in Galilee of the nations. The people that walked in darkness have seen a great light: they that dwell in the land of the shadow of death, upon them hath the light shined. Isaiah 9:1-2.

Now when Jesus had heard that John was cast into prison, he departed into Galilee; And leaving Nazareth, he came and dwelt in Capernaum, which is upon the sea coast, in the borders of Zabulon and Nephthalim: That it might be fulfilled which was spoken by Esaias the prophet, saying, The land of Zabulon, and the land of Nephthalim, by the way of the sea, beyond Jordan, Galilee of the Gentiles; The people which sat in darkness saw great light; and to them which sat in the region and shadow of death light is sprung up. Matthew 4:12-16.

For unto us a child is born, unto us a son is given: and the government shall be upon his shoulder: and his name shall be called Wonderful, Counsellor, The mighty God, the everlasting Father, The Prince of Peace. Of the increase of his government and peace there shall be no end, upon the throne of David, and upon his kingdom, to order it, and to establish it with judgment and with justice from henceforth even forever. The zeal of the Lord of hosts will perform this. (Isaiah 9:6-7).

GOD IN HIM: And the spirit of the Lord shall rest upon him, the spirit of wisdom and understanding, the spirit of counsel and might, the spirit of knowledge and of the fear of the Lord; Isaiah 11:2. The Spirit of the Lord God is upon me; because the Lord hath anointed me to preach good tidings unto the meek; he hath sent me to bind up the brokenhearted, to proclaim liberty to the captives, and the opening of the prison to them that are bound; Isaiah 61:1.

And Jesus, when he was baptized, went up straightway out of the water: and, lo, the heavens were opened unto him, and he saw the Spirit of God descending like a dove, and lighting upon him: Matthew 3:16.

How God anointed Jesus of Nazareth with the Holy Ghost and with power: who went about doing good, and healing all that were oppressed of the devil; for God was with him. Acts 10:38.

MESSIAH TO WITNESS TO GENTILES: They shall not hurt nor destroy in all my holy mountain: for the earth shall be full of the knowledge of the Lord, as the waters cover the sea. And in that day there shall be a root of Jesse, which shall stand for an ensign of the people; to it shall the Gentiles seek: and his rest shall be glorious. Isaiah 11:9-10.

As the Father knoweth me, even so I know the Father: and I lay down my life for the sheep. And other sheep I have, which are not of this fold: them also I must bring, and they shall hear my voice; and there shall be one fold, and one shepherd. John 10:15-16.

MESSIAH THE CORNER STONE OF FAITH: Because ye have said, We have made a covenant with death, and with hell are we at agreement; when the overflowing scourge shall pass through, it shall not come unto us: for we have made lies our refuge, and under falsehood have we hid ourselves: Therefore thus saith the Lord God, Behold, I lay in Zion for a foundation a stone, a tried stone, a precious corner stone, a sure foundation: he that believeth shall not make haste. Isaiah 28:15-16.

Ye also, as lively stones, are built up a spiritual house, an holy priesthood, to offer up spiritual sacrifices, acceptable to God by Jesus Christ. Wherefore also it is contained in the scripture, Behold, I lay in Sion a chief corner stone, elect, precious: and he that believeth on him shall not be confounded. Unto you therefore which believe he is precious: but unto them which be disobedient, the stone which the builders disallowed, the same is made the head of the corner, And a stone of stumbling, and a rock of offence, even to them which stumble at the word, being disobedient:



whereunto also they were appointed. 1 Peter 2:5-8.

ALMIGHTY. SAVIOR: Say to them that are of a fearful heart, Be strong, fear not: behold, your God will come with vengeance, even God with a recompence; he will come and save you. Then the eyes of the blind shall be opened, and the ears of the deaf shall be unstopped. Then shall the lame man leap as an hart, and the tongue of the dumb sing: for in the wilderness shall waters break out, and streams in the desert. Isaiah 35:4-6.

Now when John had heard in the prison the works of Christ, he sent two of his disciples, And said unto him, Art thou he that should come, or do we look for another? Jesus answered and said unto them, Go and shew John again those things which ye do hear and see: The blind receive their sight, and the lame walk, the lepers are cleansed, and the deaf hear, the dead are raised up, and the poor have the gospel preached to them. And blessed is he, whosoever shall not be offended in me. Matthew 11:2-6.

PREPARER (JOHN THE BAPTIST): The voice of him that crieth in the wilderness, Prepare ye the way of the Lord, make straight in the desert a highway for our God. Isaiah 40:3.

Behold, I will send my messenger, and he shall prepare the way before me: and the Lord, whom ye seek, shall suddenly come to his temple, even the messenger of the covenant, whom ye delight in: behold, he shall come, saith the Lord of hosts. Malachi 3:1.

In those days came John the Baptist, preaching in the wilderness of Judaea, And saying, Repent ye: for the kingdom of heaven is at hand. For this is he [Messiah] that was spoken of by the prophet Esaias, saying, The voice of one crying in the wilderness, Prepare ye the way of the Lord, make his paths straight. Matthew 3:1-3.

JUDGE: Behold my servant, whom I uphold; mine elect, in whom my soul delighteth; I have put my spirit upon him: he shall bring forth judgment to the Gentiles. He shall not cry, nor lift up, nor cause his voice to be heard in the street. Isaiah 42:1-2.

Then the Pharisees went out, and held a council against him, how they might destroy him. But when Jesus knew it, he withdrew himself from thence: and great multitudes followed him, and he healed them all; And charged them that they should not make him known: That it might be fulfilled which was spoken by Esaias the prophet, saying, Behold my servant, whom I have chosen; my beloved, in whom my soul is well pleased: I will put my spirit upon him, and he shall shew judgment to the Gentiles. He shall not strive, nor cry; neither shall any man hear his voice in the streets. A bruised reed shall he not break, and smoking flax shall he not quench, till he send forth judgment unto victory. Matthew 12:14-20.

I have blotted out, as a thick cloud, thy transgressions, and, as a cloud, thy sins: return unto me; for I have redeemed thee. (Isaiah 44:22).

There is no God else beside me; a just God and a Saviour; there is none beside me. Look unto me, and be ye saved, all the ends of the earth: for I am God, and there is none else. Isaiah 45:21b-22).

Don't forget this, O guilty ones. And don't forget the many times I clearly told you what was going to happen in the future. For I am God--I only--and there is no other like me who can tell you what is going to happen. All I say will come to pass, for I do whatever I wish. I will call that swift bird of prey from the east--that man Cyrus from far away. And he will come and do my bidding. I have said I would do it and I will. Listen to me, you stubborn, evil men! For I am offering you my deliverance; not in the distant future, but right now! I am ready to save you, and I will restore Jerusalem, and Israel, who is my glory. Isaiah 46:8-13 LVB.

SCORNE\*: Thus saith the Lord, the Redeemer of Israel, and his Holy One, to him whom man despiseth, to him whom the nation abhorreth, to a servant of rulers, Kings shall see and arise, princes also shall worship, because of the Lord that is faithful, and the Holy One of Israel, and he shall choose thee. Isaiah 49:7.

He that hateth me hateth my Father also. If I had

not done among them the works which none other man did, they had not had sin: but now have they both seen and hated both me and my Father. But this cometh to pass, that the word might be fulfilled that is written in their law, They hated me without a cause. John 15:23-25.

ISAIAH 53: NOT ATTRACTIVE: <sup>1</sup>Who hath believed our report? and to whom is the arm of the Lord revealed? <sup>2</sup>For he shall grow up before him as a tender plant, and as a root out of a dry ground: he hath no form nor comeliness; and when we shall see him, there is no beauty that we should desire him. <sup>3</sup>He is despised and rejected of men; a man of sorrows, and acquainted with grief: and we hid as it were our faces from him; he was despised, and we esteemed him not. <sup>4</sup>Surely he hath borne our griefs, and carried our sorrows: yet we did esteem him stricken, smitten of God, and afflicted...(see below)

TO BEAR OUR SINS: <sup>5</sup>But he was wounded for our transgressions, he was bruised for our iniquities: the chastisement of our peace was upon him; and with his stripes we are healed. <sup>6</sup>All we like sheep have gone astray; we have turned every one to his own way; and the Lord hath laid on him the iniquity of us all...(see below)

WILLINGLY TOOK THE PUNISHMENT: <sup>7</sup>He was oppressed, and he was afflicted, yet he opened not his mouth: he is brought as a lamb to the slaughter, and as a sheep before her shearers is dumb, so he openeth not his mouth. <sup>8</sup>He was taken from prison and from judgment: and who shall declare his generation? for he was cut off out of the land of the living: for the transgression of my people was he stricken. <sup>9</sup>And he made his grave with the wicked, and with the rich in his death; because he had done no violence, neither was any deceit in his mouth...(see below)

CRUCIFIXION WAS GOD'S WILL: <sup>10</sup>Yet it pleased the Lord to bruise him; he hath put him to grief: when thou shalt make his soul an offering for sin, he shall see his seed, he shall prolong his days, and the pleasure of the Lord shall prosper in his hand. <sup>11</sup>He shall see of the travail of his soul,

and shall be satisfied: by his knowledge shall my righteous servant justify many; for he shall bear their iniquities. <sup>12</sup>Therefore will I divide him a portion with the great, and he shall divide the spoil with the strong; because he hath poured out his soul unto death: and he was numbered with the transgressors; and he bare the sin of many, and made intercession for the transgressors. Isaiah Chapter 53...(see below)

In re v. 2: And when the sabbath day was come, he began to teach in the synagogue: and many hearing him were astonished, saying, From whence hath this man these things? and what wisdom is this which is given unto him, that even such mighty works are wrought by his hands? Is not this the carpenter, the son of Mary, the brother of James, and Joseph, and of Juda, and Simon? and are not his sisters here with us? And they were offended at him. But Jesus, said unto them, A prophet is not without honour, but in his own country, and among his own kin, and in his own house. And he could there do no mighty work, save that he laid his hands upon a few sick folk, and healed them. And he marvelled because of their unbelief. And he went round about the villages, teaching. Mark 6:2-6.

In re v. 3: Then came Jesus forth, wearing the crown of thorns, and the purple robe. And Pilate saith unto them, Behold the man! John 19:5.

In re v. 4-6: Even as the Son of man came not to be ministered unto, but to minister, and to give his life a ransom for many. Matthew 20:28.

In re v. 7: And when he was accused of the chief priests and elders, he answered nothing. Then said Pilate unto him, Hearest thou not how many things they witness against thee? And he answered him to never a word; insomuch that the governor marvelled greatly. Matthew 27:12-14.

In re v. 9: Who did no sin, neither was guile found in his mouth: Who, when he was reviled, reviled not again; when he suffered, he threatened not; but committed himself to him that judgeth righteously: 1 Peter 2:22-23.

In re v. 9: When the even was come, there came a rich man of Arimathaea, named Joseph, who also himself was Jesus' disciple: He went to Pilate, and begged the body of Jesus. Then Pilate

commanded the body to be delivered. And plucked off the hair: I hid not my face from shame and spitting. For the Lord God will help me; therefore shall I not be confounded: therefore have I set my face like a flint, and I know that I shall not be ashamed. Isaiah 50:5-7.

Ye have heard the blasphemy: what think ye? And they all condemned him to be guilty of death. And some began to spit on him, and to cover his face, and to buffet him, and to say unto him, Prophecy: and the servants did strike him with the palms of their hands. Mark 14:64-65.

SCORNE BY HIS OWN (THE JEWS): I have trodden the winepress alone; and of the people there was none with me: for I will tread them in mine anger, and trample them in my fury; and their blood shall be sprinkled upon my garments, and I will stain all my raiment. For the day of vengeance is in mine heart, and the year of my redeemed is come. Isaiah 63:3-4.

That was the true Light, which lighteth every man that cometh into the world. He was in the world, and the world was made by him, and the world knew him not. He came unto his own, and his own received him not. John 1:9-11.

Yea, the stork in the heaven knoweth her appointed times; and the turtle and the crane and the swallow observe the time of their coming; but my people know not the judgment of the Lord. (Jeremiah 8:7).

For I know the plans I have for you, says the Lord, plans for welfare and not for evil, to give you a future and a hope. Then you will call upon me and come and pray to me, and I will hear you. You will seek me and find me; when you seek me with all your heart, (Jeremiah 29:11-13 RSV).

KILLING OF CHILDREN- ATTEMPT TO SLAY MESSIAH: Thus saith the Lord; A voice was heard in Ramah, lamentation, and bitter weeping; Rachel weeping for her children refused to be comforted for her children, because they were not. Jeremiah 31:15.

Then Herod, when he saw that he was mocked of the wise men, was exceeding wroth, and sent

forth, and slew all the children that were in Bethlehem. Then was fulfilled that which was spoken by Jeremy the prophet, saying, In Rama was there a voice heard, lamentation, and weeping, and great mourning, Rachel weeping for her children, and would not be comforted, because they are not. Matthew 2:16a, 17-18.

TO LIVE AND REIGN FOREVER: I saw in the night visions, and, behold, one like the Son of man came with the clouds of heaven, and came to the Ancient of days, and they brought him near before him. And there was given him dominion, and glory, and a kingdom, that all people, nations, and languages, should serve him: his dominion is an everlasting dominion, which shall not pass away, and his kingdom that which shall not be destroyed. Daniel 7:13-14.

Wherefore God also hath highly exalted him, and given him a name which is above every name: That at the name of Jesus every knee should bow, of things in heaven, and things in earth, and things under the earth; And that every tongue should confess that Jesus Christ is Lord, to the glory of God the Father. Philippians 2:9-11.

He shall be great, and shall be called the Son of the Highest: and the Lord God shall give unto him the throne of his father David: And he shall reign over the house of Jacob for ever; and of his kingdom there shall be no end. Luke 1:32-33.

JUDGED, WITHSTOOD INDIGNITIES: Now gather thyself in troops, O daughter of troops: he hath laid siege against us: they shall smite the judge of Israel with a rod upon the cheek. Micah 5:1.

And when they had platted a crown of thorns, they put it upon his head, and a reed in his right hand: and they bowed the knee before him, and mocked him, saying, Hail, King of the Jews! And they spit upon him, and took the reed, and smote him on the head. Matthew 27:29-30.

PLACE OF BIRTH: But thou, Bethlehem Ephratah, though thou be little among the thousands of Judah, yet out of thee shall he come forth unto me that is to be ruler in Israel; whose goings forth have been from of old, from

everlasting. Micah 5:2.

And Joseph also went up from Galilee, out of the city of Nazareth, into Judaea, unto the city of David, which is called Bethlehem; (because he was of the house and lineage of David:) To be taxed with Mary his espoused wife, being great with child. And so it was, that, while they were there, the days were accomplished that she should be delivered. Luke 2:4-6.

Therefore I will look unto the Lord; I will wait for the God of my salvation: my God will hear me. Rejoice not against me, O mine enemy: when I fall, I shall arise; when I sit in darkness, the Lord shall be a light unto me. I will bear the indignation of the Lord, because I have sinned against him, until he plead my cause, and execute judgment for me: he will bring me forth to the light, and I shall behold his righteousness. (Micah 7:7-9).

Where is another God like you, who pardons the sins of the survivors among his people? You cannot stay angry with your people, for you love to be merciful. (Micah 7:18 LVB).

The Lord thy God in the midst of thee is mighty; he will save, he will rejoice over thee with joy; he will rest in his love, he will joy over thee with singing. Zephaniah 3:17).

SPIRITUAL SAVIOR TO ALL: And I will shake all nations, and the desire of all nations shall come: and I will fill this house with glory, saith the Lord of hosts. The silver is mine, and the gold is mine, saith the Lord of hosts. The glory of this latter house shall be greater than of the former, saith the Lord of hosts: and in this place will I give peace, saith the Lord of hosts. Haggai 2:7-9.

And he came by the Spirit into the temple: and when the parents brought in the child Jesus, to do for him after the custom of the law, Then took he him up in his arms, and blessed God, and said, Lord, now lettest thou thy servant depart in peace, according to thy word: For mine eyes have seen thy salvation, Which thou hast prepared before the face of all people; A light to lighten the Gentiles, and the glory of thy people Israel. Luke 2:27-32.

MESSIAH WAS RESURRECTED TO

CONQUER DEATH: Even he shall build the temple of the Lord; and he shall bear the glory, and shall sit and rule upon his throne; and he shall be a priest upon his throne: and the counsel of peace shall be between them both. Zechariah 6:13.

Who is he that condemneth? It is Christ that died, yea rather, that is risen again, who is even at the right hand of God, who also maketh intercession for us. Romans 8:34.

TRIUMPHAL ENTRY OF MESSIAH INTO JERUSALEM: Rejoice greatly, O daughter of Zion; shout, O daughter of Jerusalem: behold, thy King cometh unto thee: he is just, and having salvation; lowly, and riding upon an ass, and upon a colt the foal of an ass. Zechariah 9:9.

And when they drew nigh unto Jerusalem, and were come to Bethphage, unto the mount of Olives, then sent Jesus two disciples, Saying unto them, Go into the village over against you, and straightway ye shall find an ass tied, and a colt with her: loose them, and bring them unto me. And if any man say ought unto you, ye shall say, The Lord hath need of them; and straightway he will send them. All this was done, that it might be fulfilled which was spoken by the prophet, saying, Tell ye the daughter of Sion, Behold, thy King cometh unto thee, meek, and sitting upon an ass, and a colt the foal of an ass. Matthew 21:1-5.

BETRAYED FOR A PRICE: And I said unto them, If ye think good, give me my price; and if not, forbear. So they weighed for my price thirty pieces of silver. And the Lord said unto me, Cast it unto the potter: a goodly price that I was prised at of them. And I took the thirty pieces of silver, and cast them to the potter in the house of the Lord. Zechariah 11:12-13.

Then one of the twelve, called Judas Iscariot, went unto the chief priests, And said unto them, What will ye give me, and I will deliver him unto you? And they covenanted with him for thirty pieces of silver. And from that time he sought opportunity to betray him. Matthew 26:14-16.

ON THE CROSS HIS SIDE SHALL BE PIERCED: And I will pour upon the house of

David, and upon the inhabitants of Jerusalem, the spirit of grace and of supplications: and they shall look upon me whom they have pierced, and they shall mourn for him, as one mourneth for his only son, and shall be in bitterness for him, as one that is in bitterness for his firstborn. Zechariah 12:10. But one of the soldiers with a spear pierced his side, and forthwith came there out blood and water. And again another scripture saith, They shall look on him whom they pierced. John 19:34,37.

WILLING VICTIM TO PAY FOR OUR SINS ON A CROSS: The Lord God hath opened mine ear, and I was not rebellious, neither turned away back. I gave my back to the smiters, and my cheeks to them that the temple, and buildest it in three days, save thyself. If thou be the Son of God, come down from the cross. Likewise also the chief priests mocking him, with the scribes and elders, said, He saved others; himself he cannot save. If he be the King of Israel, let him now come down from the cross, and we will believe him. He trusted in God; let him deliver him now, if he will have him: for he said, I am the Son of God. The thieves also, which were crucified with him, cast the same in his teeth. Matthew 27:39-44.

LINEAGE OF THE MESSIAH: <sup>23</sup>And Jesus himself began to be about thirty years of age, being (as was supposed) the son of Joseph, which was the son of Heli, <sup>24</sup>W/w the son of Matthat, w/w the son of Levi, w/w the son of Melchi, w/w the son of Janna, w/w the son of Joseph, <sup>25</sup>W/w the son of Mattathias, w/w the son of Amos, w/w the son of Naum, w/w the son of Esli, w/w the son of Nagge, <sup>26</sup>W/w the son of Maath, w/w the son of Mattathias, w/w the son of Semei, w/w the son of Joseph, w/w the son of Juda, <sup>27</sup>W/w the son of Joanna, w/w the son of Rhesa, w/w the son of Zorobabel, w/w the son of Salathiel, w/w the son of Neri, <sup>28</sup>W/w the son of Melchi, w/w the son of Addi, w/w the son of Cosam, w/w the son of Elmodam, w/w the son of Er, <sup>29</sup>W/w the son of Jose, w/w the son of Eliezer, w/w the son of Jorim, w/w the son of Matthat, w/w the son of Levi, <sup>30</sup>W/w the son of Simeon, w/w the son of

Juda, w/w the son of Joseph, w/w the son of Jonan, w/w the son of Eliakim, <sup>31</sup>W/w the son of Melea, w/w the son of Menan, w/w the son of Mattatha, w/w the son of Nathan, w/w the son of David, <sup>32</sup>W/w the son of Jesse, w/w the son of Obed, w/w the son of Booz, w/w the son of Salmon, w/w the son of Naasson, <sup>33</sup>W/w the son of Aminadab, w/w the son of Aram, w/w the son of Esrom, w/w the son of Phares, w/w the son of Juda, <sup>34</sup>W/w the son of Jacob, w/w the son of Isaac, w/w the son of Abraham, w/w the son of Thara, w/w the son of Nachor, <sup>35</sup>W/w the son of Saruch, w/w the son of Ragau, w/w the son of Phalec, w/w the son of Heber, w/w the son of Sala, <sup>36</sup>W/w the son of Cainan, w/w the son of Arphaxad, w/w the son of (Shem), w/w the son of (Noah). (Luke 3:23-36a)

Now these Jews were more noble than those in Thessalonica, for they received the word with all eagerness, examining the scriptures daily to see if these things were so. Acts 17:11 RSV

## Appendix C

### THE MESSIAH, SALVATION, ANGELS, HEAVEN, AND ETERNAL LIFE

<sup>10</sup>And they that know thy name will put their trust in thee: for thou, Lord, hast not forsaken them that seek thee. <sup>11</sup>Sing praises to the Lord, which dwelleth in Zion: declare among the people his doings. <sup>12</sup>When he maketh inquisition for blood, he remembereth them: he forgetteth not the cry of the humble. <sup>13</sup>Have mercy upon me, O Lord; consider my trouble which I suffer of them that hate me, thou that liftest me up from the gates of death: <sup>14</sup>That I may shew forth all thy praise in the gates of the daughter of Zion: I will rejoice in thy salvation. <sup>15</sup>The heathen are sunk down in the pit that they made: in the net which they hid is their own foot taken. <sup>16</sup>The Lord is known by the judgment which he executeth: the wicked is snared in the work of his own hands. Higgsion. Selah. <sup>17</sup>The wicked shall be turned into hell, and all the nations that forget God. (Psalms 9:10-17).

Thou wilt shew me the path of life: in thy presence is fulness of joy; at thy right hand there are pleasures for evermore. (Psalms 16:11)

The Lord is my rock, and my fortress, and my deliverer; my God, my strength, in whom I will trust; my buckler, and the horn of my salvation, and my high tower. (Psalms 18:2).

<sup>1</sup>In thee, O Lord, do I put my trust; let me never be ashamed: deliver me in thy righteousness. <sup>2</sup>Bow down thine ear to me; deliver me speedily: be thou my strong rock, for an house of defence to save me. <sup>3</sup>For thou art my rock and my fortress; therefore for thy name's sake lead me, and guide me. <sup>4</sup>Pull me out of the net that they have laid privily for me: for thou art my strength. <sup>5</sup>Into thine hand I commit my spirit: thou hast redeemed me, O Lord God of truth. <sup>23</sup>O love the Lord, all ye his saints: for the Lord preserveth the faithful, and plentifully rewardeth the proud doer. <sup>24</sup>Be of good courage, and he shall strengthen your heart, all ye that hope in the Lord. (Psalms 31:1-5, 23-24).

<sup>12</sup>Nevertheless man being in honour abideth not: he is like the beasts that perish. <sup>13</sup>This their way is their folly: yet their posterity approve their sayings. Selah. <sup>14</sup>Like sheep they are laid in the grave; death shall feed on them; and the upright shall have dominion over them in the morning; and their beauty shall consume in the grave from their dwelling. <sup>15</sup>But God will redeem my soul from the power of the grave: for he shall receive me. Selah. (Psalms 49:12-15).

<sup>15</sup>Let death seize upon them, and let them go down quick into hell: for wickedness is in their dwellings, and among them. <sup>16</sup>As for me, I will call upon God; and the Lord shall save me. <sup>17</sup>Evening, and morning, and at noon, will I pray, and cry aloud: and he shall hear my voice. <sup>18</sup>He hath delivered my soul in peace from the battle that was against me: for there were many with me. <sup>19</sup>God shall hear, and afflict them, even he that abideth of old. <sup>22</sup>Cast thy burden upon the Lord, and he shall sustain thee: he shall never suffer the righteous to be moved. (Psalms 55:15-19, 22).

They guard us: For he shall give his angels charge over thee, to keep thee in all thy ways. They shall bear thee up in their hands, lest thou dash thy foot against a stone. (Psalms 91:11-12).

<sup>9</sup>For thou, Lord, art high above all the earth: thou art exalted far above all gods. <sup>10</sup>Ye that love the Lord, hate evil: he preserveth the souls of his saints; he delivereth them out of the hand of the wicked. (Psalms 97:9-10).

But the mercy of the Lord is from everlasting to everlasting upon them that fear him, and his righteousness unto children's children; To such as keep his covenant, and to those that remember his commandments to do them. The Lord hath prepared his throne in the heavens; and his kingdom ruleth over all. (Psalms 103:17-19).

For ever, O Lord, thy word is settled in heaven. (Psalms 119:89)

Say not thou, I will recompense evil; but wait on

the Lord, and he shall save thee. (Proverbs 20:22).

Be not rash with thy mouth, and let not thine heart be hasty to utter any thing before God: for God is in heaven, and thou upon earth: therefore let thy words be few. (Ecclesiastes 5:2)

<sup>1</sup>O Lord, thou art my God; I will exalt thee, I will praise thy name; for thou hast done wonderful things; thy counsels of old are faithfulness and truth. <sup>4</sup>For thou hast been a strength to the poor, a strength to the needy in his distress, a refuge from the storm, a shadow from the heat, when the blast of the terrible ones is as a storm against the wall. <sup>5</sup>Thou shalt bring down the noise of strangers, as the heat in a dry place; even the heat with the shadow of a cloud: the branch of the terrible ones shall be brought low. <sup>8</sup>He will swallow up death in victory; and the Lord God will wipe away tears from off all faces; and the rebuke of his people shall he take away from off all the earth: for the Lord hath spoken it. <sup>9</sup>And it shall be said in that day, Lo, this is our God; we have waited for him, and he will save us: this is the Lord; we have waited for him, we will be glad and rejoice in his salvation. (Isaiah 25:1-5, 8-9).

And therefore will the Lord wait, that he may be gracious unto you, and therefore will he be exalted, that he may have mercy upon you: for the Lord is a God of judgment: blessed are all they that wait for him. For the people shall dwell in Zion (Heaven) at Jerusalem: thou shalt weep no more: he will be very gracious unto thee at the voice of thy cry; when he shall hear it, he will answer thee. (Isaiah 30:18-19).

Salvation is from the Messiah alone: But he was wounded for our transgressions, he was bruised for our iniquities: the chastisement of our peace was upon him; and with his stripes we are healed. All we like sheep have gone astray; we have turned every one to his own way; and the Lord hath laid on him the iniquity of us all. (Isaiah 53:5-6).

<sup>20</sup>The soul that sinneth, it shall die. The son shall not bear the iniquity of the father, neither shall the father bear the iniquity of the son: the

righteousness of the righteous shall be upon him, and the wickedness of the wicked shall be upon him. <sup>21</sup>But if the wicked will turn from all his sins that he hath committed, and keep all my statutes, and do that which is lawful and right, he shall surely live, he shall not die. <sup>22</sup>All his transgressions that he hath committed, they shall not be mentioned unto him: in his righteousness that he hath done he shall live. (What does not die mean if not live, and where would this be if not with God, and where would God be if not at His throne?) (Ezekiel 18:20-22).

I made the nations to shake at the sound of his fall, when I cast him down to hell with them that descend into the pit: and all the trees of Eden, the choice and best of Lebanon, all that drink water, shall be comforted in the nether parts of the earth. (Ezekiel 31:16)

Man shall not live by bread alone, but by every word that proceedeth out of the mouth of God. (Matthew 4:4).

Rejoice, and be exceeding glad: for great is your reward in heaven: for so persecuted they the prophets which were before you. (Matthew 5:12)

But I say unto you, That whosoever is angry with his brother without a cause shall be in danger of the judgment: and whosoever shall (call his brother worthless) shall be in danger of the council: but whosoever shall say, Thou fool, shall be in danger of hell fire. (Matthew 5:22)

And if thy right hand offend thee, cut it off, and cast it from thee: for it is profitable for thee that one of thy members should perish, and not that thy whole body should be cast into hell. (Matthew 5:30)

But thou, when thou prayest, enter into thy closet, and when thou hast shut thy door, pray to thy Father which is in secret; and thy Father which seeth in secret shall reward thee openly. But when ye pray, use not vain repetitions, as the heathen do: for they think that they shall be heard for their much speaking. (Matthew 6:6-7).

After this manner therefore pray ye: Our Father which art in heaven, Hallowed be thy name. (Matthew 6:9)

<sup>21</sup>Not every one that saith unto me, Lord, Lord, shall enter into the kingdom of heaven; but he that doeth the will of my Father which is in heaven.

<sup>22</sup>Many will say to me in that day, Lord, Lord, have we not prophesied in thy name? and in thy name have cast out devils? and in thy name done many wonderful works? <sup>23</sup>And then will I profess unto them, I never knew you: depart from me, ye that work iniquity. (Matthew 7:21-23)

He that loveth father or mother more than me is not worthy of me: and he that loveth son or daughter more than me is not worthy of me. And he that taketh not his cross, and followeth after me, is not worthy of me. He that findeth his life shall lose it: and he that loseth his life for my sake shall find it. He that receiveth you receiveth me, and he that receiveth me receiveth him that sent me. (Matthew 10:37-40).

The angel at the tomb of the resurrection: And, behold, there was a great earthquake: for the angel of the Lord descended from heaven, and came and rolled back the stone from the door, and sat upon it. His countenance was like lightning, and his raiment white as snow: And for fear of him the keepers did shake, and became as dead men. (Matthew 28:2-4).

But of that day and that hour knoweth no man, no, not the angels which are in heaven, neither the Son, but the Father. (Mark 13:32)

When Jesus' time on earth was over, He ascended to His rightful position in Heaven: So then after the Lord had spoken unto them, he was received up into heaven, and sat on the right hand of God. (Mark 16:19).

And Jesus answering said unto him, It is said, Thou shalt not tempt the Lord thy God. (Luke 4:12).

Love ye your enemies, and do good, and lend,

hoping for nothing again; and your reward shall be great, and ye shall be the children of the Highest: for he is kind unto the unthankful and to the evil. Be ye therefore merciful, as your Father also is merciful. Judge not, and ye shall not be judged: condemn not, and ye shall not be condemned: forgive, and ye shall be forgiven: Give, and it shall be given unto you; good measure, pressed down, and shaken together, and running over, shall men give into your bosom. For with the same measure that ye mete withal it shall be measured to you again. (Luke 6:35-38).

Also I say unto you, Whosoever shall confess me before men, him shall the Son of man also confess before the angels of God: But he that denieth me before men shall be denied before the angels of God. And whosoever shall speak a word against the Son of man, it shall be forgiven him: but unto him that blasphemeth against the Holy Ghost it shall not be forgiven. (Luke 12:8-10).

And seek not ye what ye shall eat, or what ye shall drink, neither be ye of doubtful mind. For all these things do the nations of the world seek after: and your Father knoweth that ye have need of these things. But rather seek ye the kingdom of God; and all these things shall be added unto you. (Luke 12:29-31).

<sup>24</sup>Strive to enter in at the strait gate: for many, I say unto you, will seek to enter in, and shall not be able. <sup>25</sup>When once the master of the house is risen up, and hath shut the door, and ye begin to stand without, and to knock at the door, saying, Lord, Lord, open unto us; and he shall answer and say unto you, I know you not whence ye are: <sup>26</sup>Then shall ye begin to say, We have eaten and drunk in thy presence, and thou hast taught in our streets. <sup>27</sup>But he shall say, I tell you, I know you not whence ye are; depart from me, all ye workers of iniquity. <sup>28</sup>There shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth, when ye shall see Abraham, and Isaac, and Jacob, and all the prophets, in the kingdom of God, and you yourselves thrust out. (Luke 13:24-28)

The angels from Heaven watched over Jesus:



(Jesus, praying in the Garden of Gethsemane) Saying, Father, if thou be willing, remove this cup from me (betrayal by Judas): nevertheless not my will, but thine, be done. And there appeared an angel unto him from heaven, strengthening him. (Luke 22:42-43).

<sup>39</sup>And one of the malefactors which were hanged railed on him, saying, If thou be Christ, save thyself and us. <sup>40</sup>But the other answering rebuked him, saying, Dost not thou fear God, seeing thou art in the same condemnation? <sup>41</sup>And we indeed justly; for we receive the due reward of our deeds: but this man hath done nothing amiss. <sup>42</sup>And he said unto Jesus, Lord, remember me when thou comest into thy kingdom. <sup>43</sup>And Jesus said unto him, Verily I say unto thee, To day shalt thou be with me in paradise. (Luke 23:39-43)

He that believeth on the Son hath everlasting life: and he that believeth not the Son shall not see life; but the wrath of God abideth on him. (John 3:36).

Whosoever shall confess that Jesus is the Son of God, God dwelleth in him, and he in God. And we have known and believed the love that God hath to us. God is love; and he that dwelleth in love dwelleth in God, and God in him. (1 John 4:15-16).

Labour not for the meat which perisheth, but for that meat which endureth unto everlasting life, which the Son of man shall give unto you: for him hath God the Father sealed. (John 6:27).

Then said Jesus to those Jews which believed on him, If ye continue in my word, then are ye my disciples indeed; And ye shall know the truth, and the truth shall make you free. (John 8:31-32).

<sup>24a</sup>How long dost thou make us to doubt? If thou be the Christ, tell us plainly. <sup>25</sup>Jesus answered them, I told you, and ye believed not: the works that I do in my Father's name, they bear witness of me. <sup>26</sup>But ye believe not, because ye are not of my sheep, as I said unto you. <sup>27</sup>My sheep hear my voice, and I know them, and they follow me: <sup>28</sup>And I give unto them eternal life; and they shall

never perish, neither shall any man pluck them out of my hand. <sup>29</sup>My Father, which gave them me, is greater than all; and no man is able to pluck them out of my Father's hand. <sup>30</sup>I and my Father are one. (John 10:24b-30)

In my Father's house are many mansions: if it were not so, I would have told you. I go to prepare a place for you. And if I go and prepare a place for you, I will come again, and receive you unto myself; that where I am, there ye may be also. And whither I go ye know, and the way ye know. Thomas saith unto him, Lord, we know not whither thou goest; and how can we know the way? Jesus saith unto him, I am the way, the truth, and the life: no man cometh unto the Father, but by me. (John 14:2-6)

Heaven is my throne, and earth is my footstool: what house will ye build me? saith the Lord: or what is the place of my rest? (Acts 7:49)

Believe on the Lord Jesus Christ, and thou shalt be saved, and thy house. (Acts 16:31).

Angels watch us: For I think that God hath set forth us the apostles last, as it were appointed to death: for we are made a spectacle unto the world, and to angels, and to men. (1 Corinthians 4:9).

A GRAND PROMISE- NEW BODIES: <sup>35</sup>But some man will say, How are the dead raised up? And with what body do they come? <sup>36</sup>Thou fool, that which thou sowest is not quickened, except it die: <sup>37</sup>And that which thou sowest, thou sowest not that body that shall be, but bare grain, it may chance of wheat, or of some other grain: <sup>38</sup>But God giveth it a body as it hath pleased him, and to every seed his own body. <sup>39</sup>All flesh is not the same flesh: but there is one kind of flesh of men, another flesh of beasts, another of fishes, and another of birds. <sup>40</sup>There are also celestial bodies, and bodies terrestrial: but the glory of the celestial is one, and the glory of the terrestrial is another. <sup>41</sup>There is one glory of the sun, and another glory of the moon, and another glory of the stars: for one star differeth from another star in glory. <sup>42</sup>So also is the resurrection of the dead. It is sown in

corruption; it is raised in incorruption: <sup>43</sup>It is sown in dishonour; it is raised in glory: it is sown in weakness; it is raised in power: <sup>44</sup>It is sown a natural body; it is raised a spiritual body. There is a natural body, and there is a spiritual body. <sup>45</sup>And so it is written, The first man Adam was made a living soul; the last Adam was made a quickening spirit. <sup>46</sup>Howbeit that was not first which is spiritual, but that which is natural; and afterward that which is spiritual. <sup>47</sup>The first man is of the earth, earthy: the second man is the Lord from heaven. <sup>48</sup>As is the earthy, such are they also that are earthy: and as is the heavenly, such are they also that are heavenly. <sup>49</sup>And as we have borne the image of the earthy, we shall also bear the image of the heavenly. <sup>50</sup>Now this I say, brethren, that flesh and blood cannot inherit the kingdom of God; neither doth corruption inherit incorruption. <sup>51</sup>Behold, I shew you a mystery; We shall not all sleep, but we shall all be changed, <sup>52</sup>In a moment, in the twinkling of an eye, at the last trump: for the trumpet shall sound, and the dead shall be raised incorruptible, and we shall be changed. <sup>53</sup>For this corruptible must put on incorruption, and this mortal must put on immortality. <sup>54</sup>So when this corruptible shall have put on incorruption, and this mortal shall have put on immortality, then shall be brought to pass the saying that is written, Death is swallowed up in victory. <sup>55</sup>O death, where is thy sting? O grave, where is thy victory? <sup>56</sup>The sting of death is sin; and the strength of sin is the law. <sup>57</sup>But thanks be to God, which giveth us the victory through our Lord Jesus Christ. (1 Corinthians 15:35-57)

## WHAT ARE WE TO BELIEVE AND DO?

<sup>1</sup>Children, obey your parents in the Lord: for this is right.

<sup>2</sup>Honour thy father and mother;

<sup>4</sup>And, ye fathers, provoke not your children to wrath: but bring them up in the nurture and admonition of the Lord.

<sup>5</sup>Servants, be obedient to...your masters according to the flesh, with fear and trembling, in singleness of your heart, as unto Christ;...<sup>7</sup>With good will doing service, as to the Lord, and not to men:

<sup>9</sup>And, ye masters, do the same things unto them, forbearing threatening: knowing that your Master also is in heaven; neither is there respect of persons with him.

<sup>10</sup>Finally, my brethren, be strong in the Lord, and in the power of his might. <sup>11</sup>Put on the whole armour of God, that ye may be able to stand against the wiles of the devil. (Ephesians 6:1-11)

And whatsoever ye do, do it heartily, as to the Lord, and not unto men; knowing that of the Lord ye shall receive the reward of the inheritance: for ye serve the Lord Christ. But he that doeth wrong shall receive for the wrong which he hath done: and there is no respect of persons. (Colossians 3:23-25).

Study to shew thyself approved unto God, a workman that needeth not to be ashamed, rightly dividing the word of truth. (2 Timothy 2:15).

Follow peace with all men, and holiness, without which no man shall see the Lord: Looking diligently lest any man fail of the grace of God; lest any root of bitterness springing up trouble you, and thereby many be defiled; (Hebrews 12:14-15).

For whosoever shall keep the whole law, and yet offend in one point, he is guilty of all. For he that said, Do not commit adultery, said also, Do not kill. Now if thou commit no adultery, yet if thou kill, thou art become a transgressor of the law. (James 2:10-11).

<sup>23</sup>For you have a new life. It was not passed on to you from your parents, for the life they gave you will fade away. This new one will last forever, for it comes from Christ, God's ever-living Message to men. <sup>24</sup>Yes, our natural lives will fade as grass does when it becomes all brown and dry. All our greatness is like a flower that droops and falls; <sup>25</sup>but the Word of the Lord will last forever. And his message is the Good News that was preached to you. (1 Peter 1:23-25 Living Bible)

They are mighty, they do not bring judgment: Whereas angels, which are greater in power and might, bring not railing accusation against them

before the Lord. (2 Peter 2:11).

He that hath an ear, let him hear what the Spirit saith unto the churches; To him that overcometh will I give to eat of the tree of life, which is in the midst of the paradise of God. (Revelation 2:7)

And the sea gave up the dead which were in it; and death and hell delivered up the dead which were in them: and they were judged every man according to their works. And death and hell were cast into the lake of fire. This is the second death. (Revelation 20:13-14)

HEAVEN IS PHYSICAL AND JOYOUS: <sup>1</sup>I saw a new heaven and a new earth: for the first heaven and the first earth were passed away; and there was no more sea. (Compare Isaiah 65:17 For, behold, I create new heavens and a new earth: and the former shall not be remembered, nor come into mind.) <sup>2</sup>And I John saw the holy city, new Jerusalem, coming down from God out of heaven, <sup>3</sup>And I heard a great voice out of heaven saying, Behold, the tabernacle of God is with men, and he will dwell with them, and they shall be his people, and God himself shall be with them, and be their God. <sup>4</sup>And God shall wipe away all tears from their eyes; and there shall be no more death, neither sorrow, nor crying, neither shall there be any more pain: for the former things are passed away. <sup>5</sup>And he that sat upon the throne said, Behold, I make all things new. And he said unto me, Write: for these words are true and faithful. <sup>6</sup>And he said unto me, It is done. I am Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the end. I will give unto him that is athirst of the fountain of the water of life freely. <sup>7</sup>He that overcometh shall inherit all things; and I will be his God, and he shall be my son. <sup>8</sup>But the unbelieving shall have their part in the lake which burneth with fire and brimstone: which is the second death. <sup>9</sup>And there came unto me one of the seven angels saying, Come hither, I will shew thee the Lamb's wife. <sup>10</sup>And he carried me away in the spirit to a great and high mountain, and shewed me that great city, the holy Jerusalem, descending out of heaven from God, <sup>11</sup>Having the glory of God: and her light was like unto a stone most precious, even like a jasper stone, clear as

crystal; <sup>12</sup>And had a wall great and high, and had twelve gates, and at the gates twelve angels, and names written thereon, which are the names of the twelve tribes of Israel: <sup>14</sup>And the wall of the city had twelve foundations, and in them the names of the twelve apostles of the Lamb. <sup>16</sup>And he measured the city with the reed, twelve thousand furlongs. The length and the breadth and the height of it are equal. <sup>17</sup>And he measured the wall thereof, an hundred and forty and four cubits, according to the measure of a man, that is, of the angel. <sup>18</sup>And the building of the wall of it was of jasper: and the city was pure gold, like unto clear glass. <sup>19</sup>And the foundations of the wall of the city were garnished with precious stones. The first foundation was jasper; the second, sapphire; the third, chalcedony; the fourth, emerald; <sup>20</sup>The fifth, sardonyx; the sixth, sardius; the seventh, chrysolite; the eighth, beryl; the ninth, topaz; the tenth, chrysoprasus; the eleventh, jacinth; the twelfth, amethyst. <sup>21</sup>And the twelve gates were twelve pearls: every gate was of one pearl: and the street of the city was pure gold, as it were transparent glass. <sup>22</sup>And I saw no temple therein: for the Lord God Almighty and the Lamb are the temple of it. <sup>23</sup>And the city had no need of the sun, neither of the moon, to shine in it: for the glory of God did lighten it, and the Lamb is the light thereof. <sup>24</sup>And the nations of them which are saved shall walk in the light of it: and the kings of the earth do bring their glory and honour into it. <sup>25</sup>And the gates of it shall not be shut at all by day: for there shall be no night there. <sup>26</sup>And they shall bring the glory and honour of the nations into it. <sup>27</sup>And there shall in no wise enter into it any thing that defileth, neither whatsoever worketh abomination, or maketh a lie: but they which are written in the Lamb's book of life. <sup>1</sup>And he shewed me a pure river of water of life, clear as crystal, proceeding out of the throne of God and of the Lamb. <sup>2</sup>In the midst of the street of it, and on either side of the river, was there the tree of life, which bare twelve manner of fruits, and yielded her fruit every month: and the leaves of the tree were for the healing of the nations. <sup>3</sup>And there shall be no more curse: but the throne of God and of the Lamb shall be in it; and his servants shall serve him: <sup>4</sup>And they shall see his face; and his

name shall be in their foreheads. <sup>5</sup>And there shall be no night there; and they need no candle, neither light of the sun; for the Lord God giveth them light: and they shall reign for ever and ever. <sup>20</sup>He which testifieth these things saith, Surely I come quickly. Amen. Even so, come, Lord Jesus. (Condensed from Revelation 21:1-27, 22:1-5,20)

## **Appendix D**

### **THE BIBLE ON DAILY LIVING**

And God blessed them, and God said unto them, Be fruitful, and multiply, and replenish the earth, and subdue it: and have dominion over the fish of the sea, and over the fowl of the air, and over every living thing that moveth upon the earth. (Genesis 1:28).

**MARRIAGE AND DIVORCE:** And the Lord God said, It is not good that the man should be alone; I will make him an help meet for him. And the Lord God caused a deep sleep to fall upon Adam, and he slept: and he took one of his ribs, and closed up the flesh instead thereof; And the rib, which the Lord God had taken from man, made he a woman, and brought her unto the man. And Adam said, This is now bone of my bones, and flesh of my flesh: she shall be called Woman, because she was taken out of Man. Therefore shall a man leave his father and his mother, and shall cleave unto his wife: and they shall be one flesh. (Genesis 2:18, 21-24)

**WHY MARRIAGE:** A covenant relationship (Malachi 2:1-4). Designed for our happiness (Genesis 2:18). Joyous (Jeremiah 33:11). For increasing the human population (Genesis 1:28). For raising Godly seed (Malachi 2:15). Expressed by making affinity (1 Kings 3:1). Celebrated (Genesis 29:21-22). Illustrative of God's union with the Jewish nation (Isaiah 54:5).

**SATAN'S DECEPTION & FIRST SIN:** Now the serpent was more subtil than any beast of the field which the Lord God had made. And he said unto the woman, Yea, hath God said, Ye shall not eat of every tree of the garden? Eve replied to Satan that she and Adam could not eat of the tree in the midst of the garden or they would die. And the serpent said unto the woman, Ye shall not surely die. Satan continues, For God doth know that in the day ye eat thereof, then your eyes shall be opened, and ye shall be as gods, knowing good and evil. (Genesis 3:1, 4, 5).

CURSE OF HAM: <sup>20</sup>And Noah...planted a vineyard: <sup>21</sup>And he drank of the wine, and was drunken; and he was uncovered within his tent. <sup>22</sup>And Ham, the father of Canaan, saw the nakedness of his father, and told his two brethren without. <sup>23</sup>And Shem and Japheth took a garment, and laid it upon both their shoulders, and went backward, and covered the nakedness of their father; and their faces were backward, and they saw not their father's nakedness. <sup>24</sup>And Noah awoke from his wine, and knew what his younger son had done unto him. <sup>25</sup>And he said, Cursed be Canaan; a servant of servants shall he be unto his brethren. <sup>26</sup>And he said, Blessed be the Lord God of Shem; and Canaan shall be his servant. <sup>27</sup>God shall enlarge Japheth, and he shall dwell in the tents of Shem; and Canaan shall be his servant. <sup>15</sup>And Canaan begat Sidon his firstborn, and Heth, <sup>16</sup>And the Jebusite, and the Amorite, and the Girgasite, <sup>17</sup>And the Hivite, and the Arkite, and the Sinite, <sup>18</sup>And the Arvadite, and the Zemarite, and the Hamathite: and afterward were the families of the Canaanites spread abroad. <sup>19</sup>And the border of the Canaanites was from Sidon, as thou comest to Gerar, unto Gaza; as thou goest, unto Sodom, and Gomorrah, and Admah, and Zeboim, even unto Lasha. (Genesis 9:20-27, 10:15-19)

SODOM AND GOMORRAH: <sup>1</sup>Two angels came to Sodom; Lot was sitting in the gate. When Lot saw them, he rose to meet them, and bowed himself, <sup>2</sup>and said, "My lords, turn aside, I pray you, to your servant's house and spend the night; then you may rise up early and go on your way." They said, "No; we will spend the night in the street." <sup>3</sup>But he urged them strongly; so they turned aside to him and entered his house; and he made them a feast, and they ate. <sup>4</sup>But before they lay down, the men of Sodom, both young and old, all the people to the last man, surrounded the house; <sup>5</sup>and they called to Lot, "Where are the men who came to you tonight? Bring them out to us, that we may know them." <sup>6</sup>Lot went out of the door to the men, shut the door after him, <sup>7</sup>and said, "I beg you, my brothers, do not act so wickedly. <sup>8</sup>I have two daughters who have not known man; let me bring them to you, and do to them as you please; only do nothing to these men." <sup>9</sup>But they

said, "Stand back!" And they said, "This fellow came to sojourn, and he would play the judge! Now we will deal worse with you than with them." Then they pressed hard against the man Lot, and drew near to break the door. <sup>10</sup>But the (angels) brought Lot into the house, and shut the door. <sup>11</sup>And they struck with blindness the men who were at the door of the house so that they wearied themselves groping for the door. <sup>12</sup>Then the (angels) said to Lot, "Have you any one else here? Sons-in-law, sons, daughters, or any one you have in the city, bring them out; <sup>13</sup>for we are about to destroy this place, because the outcry against its people has become great before the Lord, and the Lord has sent us to destroy it." <sup>14</sup>So Lot went out and said to his sons-in-law, "Up, get out of this place; for the Lord is about to destroy the city." But he seemed to his sons-in-law to be jesting. <sup>15</sup>When morning dawned, the angels urged Lot, saying, "Arise, take your wife and your two daughters who are here, lest you be consumed in the punishment of the city." <sup>16</sup>But he lingered; so the (angels) seized him and his wife and his two daughters by the hand, the Lord being merciful to him, and they set him outside the city. <sup>17</sup>And they said, "Flee for your life; do not look back or stop lest you be consumed." <sup>18</sup>And Lot said to them, "Oh, no, my lords; <sup>19</sup>behold, your servant has found favor in your sight, and you have shown me great kindness in saving my life; but I cannot flee to the hills, lest the disaster overtake me, and I die. (Genesis 19:1-19 RSV, condensed)

And Jacob said unto Laban, Give me my wife, for my days are fulfilled, that I may go in unto her. And Laban gathered together all the men of the place, and made a feast. (Genesis 29:21-22).

Thou shalt not kill. (Exodus 20:13)

If two men are fighting, and in the process hurt a pregnant woman so that she has a miscarriage, but she lives, then the man who injured her shall be fined whatever amount the woman's husband shall demand, and as the judges approve. (Exodus 21:22)

Keep thee far from a false matter; and the innocent

and righteous slay thou not: for I will not justify the wicked. (Exodus 23:7)

So Moses returned to the Lord and said, Oh, these people have sinned a great sin, and have made themselves gods of gold. Yet now if you will only forgive their sin--and if not, then blot me out of the book you have written. (Exodus 32:31-32 Living Bible).

ADULTERY: Thou shalt not lie carnally with thy neighbor's wife (Leviticus 18:20).

HOMOSEXUALITY: <sup>22</sup>You shall not lie with a male as with a woman; it is an abomination. <sup>24</sup>Do not defile yourselves by any of these (lusts), for by all these the nations I am casting out before you defiled themselves; <sup>25</sup>and the land became defiled, so that I punished its iniquity, and the land vomited out its inhabitants. (Leviticus 18:22, 24-25 RSV)

If a man sleeps with his father's wife, he has defiled what is his father's; both the man and the woman must die. And if a man has sexual intercourse with his daughter-in-law, both shall be executed. The penalty for homosexual acts is death to both parties. If a man has sexual intercourse with a woman and with her mother, it is a great evil. All three shall be burned alive to wipe out wickedness from among you. If a man has sexual intercourse with an animal, he shall be executed and the animal killed. If a woman has sexual intercourse with an animal, kill the woman and the animal. If a man has sexual intercourse with his sister, it is a shameful thing, and they shall publicly be cut off from the people of Israel. If a man has sexual intercourse with a woman during her period of menstruation, both shall be excommunicated. Sexual intercourse is outlawed between a man and his maiden aunt for they are near of kin. If a man has intercourse with his uncle's wife, they shall bear their sin and die childless. If a man marries his brother's wife, this is impurity; and they shall be childless. (From Leviticus 20:11-21 LVB).

(For the Lord thy God is a merciful God;) he will

not forsake thee, neither destroy thee, nor forget the covenant of thy fathers which he swore unto them. (Deuteronomy 4:31).

Cursed be he that lieth with:

His father's wife; because he uncovereth his father's skirt.

Any manner of beast.

His sister, the daughter of his father, or the daughter of his mother.

His mother in law. (From Deuteronomy 27:20-23).

In that I command thee this day to love the Lord thy God, to walk in his ways, and to keep his commandments and his statutes and his judgments, that thou mayest live and multiply: and the Lord thy God shall bless thee in the land whither thou goest to possess it. (Deuteronomy 30:16).

And Solomon made affinity with Pharaoh king of Egypt, and took Pharaoh's daughter, and brought her into the city of David, until he had made an end of building his own house, and the house of the Lord, and the wall of Jerusalem round about. (1 Kings 3:1).

Blessed be the Lord who has given rest to his people Israel, according to all that he promised; not one word has failed of all his good promise, which he uttered by Moses his servant. (1 Kings 8:56 RSV).

There was homosexuality throughout the land, and the people of Judah became as depraved as the heathen nations which the Lord drove out to make room for his people. (1 Kings 14:24 Living Bible)

And he broke down the houses of the male cult prostitutes which were in the house of the Lord, where the women wove hangings for the Asherah. (2 Kings 23:7 Revised Standard Version)

Be ye mindful always of his covenant; the word which he commanded to a thousand generations; (1 Chronicles 16:15).

Thinkest thou this to be right, that thou saidst, My righteousness is more than God's? (Job 35:2).

We will not hide them from their children, shewing to the generation to come the praises of the Lord, and his strength, and his wonderful works that he hath done. For he established a testimony in Jacob, and appointed a law in Israel, which he commanded our fathers, that they should make them known to their children: That the generation to come might know them, even the children which should be born; who should arise and declare them to their children: That they might set their hope in God, and not forget the works of God, but keep his commandments: (Psalms 78:4-7)

There is none like thee among the gods, O Lord, nor are there any works like thine. All the nations thou hast made shall come and bow down before thee, O Lord, and shall glorify thy name. For thou art great and doest wondrous things, thou alone art God. (Psalms 86:8-10 RSV).

He hath remembered his covenant for ever, the word which he commanded to a thousand generations. (Psalms 105:8).

Lo, children are an heritage of the Lord: and the fruit of the womb is his reward. As arrows are in the hand of a mighty man; so are children of one's youth. Happy is the man that hath his quiver full of them: they shall not be ashamed, but they shall speak with the enemies in the gate. (Psalms 127:3-5)

Thy wife shall be as a fruitful vine by the sides of thine house: thy children like olive plants round about thy table. (Psalms 128:3)

For thou hast possessed my reins: thou hast covered me in my mother's womb. I will praise thee; for I am fearfully and wonderfully made: marvelous are thy works; and that my soul knoweth right well. My substance was not hid from thee, when I was made in secret, and curiously wrought in the lowest parts of the earth. (Psalms 139:13-15)

The Lord is gracious, and full of compassion, slow to anger, and of great mercy. (Psalms 145:8). He will make you a new creature. That means, if you confess and turn from a life as the most sinful bigot, he will save you and change you. As far as the east is from the west, so far hath he removed our transgressions from us. (Psalms 103:12). Therefore if any man be in Christ, he is a new creature: old things are passed away; behold, all things are become new. (2 Corinthians 5:17).

Let thy fountain be blessed: and rejoice with the wife of thy youth. Let her be as the loving hind and pleasant roe; let her breasts satisfy thee at all times; and be thou ravished always with her love. And why wilt thou, my son, be ravished with a strange woman, and embrace the bosom of a stranger? (Proverbs 5:18-20).

WHAT IS LUST: Keep thee from the evil woman, from the flattery of the tongue of a strange woman. Lust not after her beauty in thine heart; neither let her take thee with her eyelids. For by means of a whorish woman a man is brought to a piece of bread: and the adulteress will hunt for the precious life. Can a man take fire in his bosom, and his clothes not be burned? Can one go upon hot coals, and his feet not be burned? So he that goeth in to his neighbour's wife; whosoever toucheth her shall not be innocent. (Proverbs 6:24-29).

HATE GROUPS: He that despiseth his neighbour sinneth: but he that hath mercy on the poor, happy is he. (Proverbs 14:21)

The highway of the upright is to depart from evil: he that keepeth his way preserveth his soul. Pride goeth before destruction, and an haughty spirit before a fall. Better it is to be of an humble spirit with the lowly, than to divide the spoil with the proud. (Proverbs 16:17-19)

Children's children are the crown of old men; and the glory of children are their fathers. (Proverbs 17:6)

GOD'S PURPOSE: Many are the plans in the

mind of a man, but it is the purpose of the Lord that will be established. (Proverbs 19:21 RSV).

Let not thine heart envy sinners: but be thou in the fear of the Lord all the day long. For surely there is an end; and thine expectation shall not be cut off. Proverbs 23:17-18).

He that is of a proud heart stirreth up strife: but he that putteth his trust in the Lord shall be made fat. He that trusteth in his own heart is a fool: but whoso walketh wisely, he shall be delivered. (Proverbs 28:25-26).

Who can find a virtuous woman? for her price is far above rubies. (Proverbs 31:10).

PROPER MARITAL RELATIONSHIPS: Live joy-fully with the wife whom thou lovest all the days of the life of thy vanity, which he hath given thee under the sun, all the days of thy vanity: for that is thy portion in this life, and in thy labour which thou takest under the sun. (Ecclesiastes 9:9).

Be not hasty in thy spirit to be angry: for anger resteth in the bosom of fools. (Ecclesiastes 7:9)

Woe to those who think themselves wise and believe themselves enlightened. (Isaiah 5:21 NJB).

Thus saith the Lord the King of Israel, and his redeemer the Lord of hosts; I am the first, and I am the last; and beside me there is no God. (Isaiah 44:6).

For thy Maker is thine husband; the Lord of hosts is his name; and thy Redeemer the Holy One of Israel; The God of the whole earth shall he be called. (Isaiah 54:5).

For the mountains may depart, and the hills be removed; but my lovingkindness shall not depart from thee, neither shall my covenant of peace be removed, saith Jehovah that hath mercy on thee. (Isaiah 54:10 ASV).

The Prophet Jeremiah: Then the word of the Lord came unto me saying, Before I formed thee in the womb, I knew thee; and before thou camest forth out of the womb, I sanctified thee, and I ordained thee a prophet unto the nations. (Jeremiah 1:4-5)

Turn, O backsliding children, saith the Lord; for I am married unto you: and I will take you one of a city, and two of a family, and I will bring you to Zion: (Jeremiah 3:14).

The voice of joy, and the voice of gladness, the voice of the bridegroom, and the voice of the bride, the voice of them that shall say, Praise the Lord of hosts: for the Lord is good; for his mercy endureth for ever: and of them that shall bring the sacrifice of praise into the house of the Lord. For I will cause to return the captivity of the land, as at the first, saith the Lord. (Jeremiah 33:11).

Daniel answered and said, Blessed be the name of God for ever and ever: for wisdom and might are his: And he changeth the times and the seasons: he removeth kings, and setteth up kings: he giveth wisdom unto the wise, and knowledge to them that know understanding: He revealeth the deep and secret things: he knoweth what is in the darkness, and the light dwelleth with him. (Daniel 2:20-22).

And I will betroth thee unto me forever; yea, I will betroth thee unto me in righteousness, and in judgment, and in loving kindness, and in mercies. I will even betroth thee unto me in faithfulness: and thou shalt know the Lord. (Hosea 2:19-20).

Abortion: Will the Lord be pleased with thousands of rams, or with ten thousands of rivers of oil? Shall I give my firstborn for my transgression, the fruit of my body for the sin of my soul? (Micah 6:7)

LOVE GROUPS & ENDING RACISM: Have we not all one father? hath not one God created us? why do we deal treacherously every man against his brother, by profaning the covenant of our fathers? (Malachi 2:10).

Because the Lord hath been witness between thee



and the wife of thy youth, against whom thou hast dealt treacherously: yet is she thy companion, and the wife of thy covenant. And did not he make one? Yet had he the residue of the spirit. And wherefore one? That he might seek a godly seed. Therefore take heed to your spirit, and let none deal treacherously against the wife of his youth. (Malachi 2:14-15).

**GOD DOES NOT CHANGE: HOW CAN WE:** No; I, Yahweh, do not change; and you have not ceased to be children of Jacob! (Malachi 3:6 NJB).

Words of Christ: But I say unto you, That whosoever is angry with his brother without a cause shall be in danger of the judgment: Ye have heard that it was said by them of old time, Thou shalt not commit adultery: But I say unto you, That whosoever looketh on a woman to lust after her hath committed adultery with her already in his heart. It hath been said, Whosoever shall put away his wife, let him give her a writing of divorcement: But I say unto you, That whosoever shall put away his wife, saving for the cause of fornication, causeth her to commit adultery: and whosoever shall marry her that is divorced committeth adultery. (Matthew 5:22a, 27-28, 31-32).

But I say unto you, Love your enemies, bless them that curse you, do good to them that hate you, and pray for them which despitefully use you, and persecute you; That ye may be the children of your Father which is in heaven: (Matthew 5:44-45a)

**RACISM AND PREJUDICE:** Jesus said unto him, thou shalt love thy neighbor as thyself. Matthew 22:37,39.

And he arose from thence, and cometh into the coasts of Judaea by the farther side of Jordan: and the people resort unto him again; and, as he was wont, he taught them again. And the Pharisees came to him, and asked him, Is it lawful for a man to put away his wife? tempting him. And he answered and said unto them, What did Moses command you? And they said, Moses suffered to write a bill of divorcement, and to put her away.

Jesus answered and said unto them, For the hardness of your heart he wrote you this precept. But from the beginning of the creation God made them male and female. For this cause shall a man leave his father and mother, and cleave to his wife; And they twain shall be one flesh: so then they are no more twain, but one flesh. What therefore God hath joined together, let not man put asunder. And in the house his disciples asked him again of the same matter. And he saith unto them, Whosoever shall put away his wife, and marry another, committeth adultery against her. And if a woman shall put away her husband, and be married to another, she committeth adultery. (Mark 10:1-12).

Suffer the little children to come unto me, and forbid them not: for of such is the kingdom of God. Verily I say unto you, Whosoever shall not receive the kingdom of God as a little child, he shall not enter therein. And he took them up in his arms, put his hands upon them, and blessed them. (Mark 10:14b-16)

But love ye your enemies, and do good, and lend, hoping for nothing again; and your reward shall be great, and ye shall be the children of the Highest: for he is kind unto the unthankful and to the evil. Be ye therefore merciful, as your Father also is merciful. Judge not, and ye shall not be judged: condemn not, and ye shall not be condemned: forgive, and ye shall be forgiven: Give, and it shall be given unto you; good measure, pressed down, and shaken together, and running over, shall men give into your bosom. For with the same measure that ye mete withal it shall be measured to you again. (Luke 6:35-38)

For all that is in the world, the lust of the flesh, and the lust of the eyes, and the pride of life, is not of (God), but is of the world. And the world passeth away, and the lust thereof: but he that doeth the will of God abideth forever. (1 John 2:16-17)

**HOW MANY SKIN COLORS ARE THERE:** God that made the world and all things therein, seeing that he is Lord of heaven and earth, dwelleth not in temples made with hands; Neither is worshipped

with men's hands, as though he needed any thing, seeing he giveth to all life, and breath, and all things; And hath made of one blood all nations of men for to dwell on all the face of the earth, and hath determined the times before appointed, and the bounds of their habitation; That they should seek the Lord, if haply they might feel after him, and find him, though he be not far from every one of us: For in him we live, and move, and have our being; as certain also of your own poets have said, For we are also his offspring. (Acts 17:24-28)

Now the body is not for fornication, but for the Lord; and the Lord for the body. Flee fornication. Every sin that a man doeth is without the body; but he that committeth fornication sinneth against his own body. What? know ye not that your body is the temple of the Holy Ghost which is in you, which ye have of God, and ye are not your own? (1 Cor. 6:13b, 18-19)

<sup>18</sup>All these new things are from God who brought us back to himself through what Christ Jesus did. And God has given us the privilege of urging everyone to come into his favor and be reconciled to him. <sup>19</sup>For God was in Christ, restoring the world to himself, no longer counting men's sins against them but blotting them out. This is the wonderful message he has given us to tell others. <sup>21</sup>We are Christ's ambassadors. God is using us to speak to you: we beg you, as though Christ himself were here pleading with you, receive the love he offers you--be reconciled to God. (2 Corinthians 5:18-20 Living Bible).

Let all bitterness, and wrath, and anger, and clamour, and evil speaking, be put away from you, with all malice: And be ye kind one to another, tenderhearted, forgiving one another, even as God for Christ's sake hath forgiven you. (Ephesians 4:31-32)

You wives must submit to your husbands' leadership in the same way you submit to the Lord. For a husband is in charge of his wife in the same way Christ is in charge of his body the Church. (He gave his very life to take care of it and be its Savior!) So you wives must willingly obey your

husbands in everything, just as the Church obeys Christ. And you husbands, show the same kind of love to your wives as Christ showed to the Church when he died for her, to make her holy and clean, washed by baptism and God's Word; so that he could give her to himself as a glorious Church without a single spot or wrinkle or any other blemish, being holy and without a single fault. That is how husbands should treat their wives, loving them as parts of themselves. For since a man and his wife are now one, a man is really doing himself a favor and loving himself when he loves his wife! No one hates his own body but lovingly cares for it, just as Christ cares for his body the Church, of which we are parts. (That the husband and wife are one body is proved by the Scripture which says, A man must leave his father and mother when he marries, so that he can be perfectly joined to his wife, and the two shall be one.) I know this is hard to understand, but it is an illustration of the way we are parts of the body of Christ. So again I say, a man must love his wife as a part of himself; and the wife must see to it that she deeply respects her husband--obeying, praising and honoring him. (Ephesians 5:22-33 Living Bible).

Now faith is assurance of things hoped for, a conviction of things not seen. For therein the elders had witness borne to them. By faith we understand that the worlds have been framed by the word of God, so that what is seen hath not been made out of things which appear. Hebrews 11:1-3 ASV

Marriage is honourable in all, and the bed undefiled: but whoremongers and adulterers God will judge. (Hebrews 13:4).

Blessed is the man that endureth temptation: for when he is tried, he shall receive the crown of life, which the Lord hath promised to them that love him. (James 1:12)

Which is worse? As written by James, the brother of Jesus, The royal command is found in Scripture: You must love other people the same way you love yourself. If you obey, you are doing

fine, but if you treat anyone differently, your deeds are sinful! So, according to the law, you will be judged as wrongdoers. The person who obeys the whole law and yet breaks only one of its commands is as guilty as if he broke all of the commands! (James 2:8-10 Simple English).

**HOW TO DEFEAT LUST:** Submit yourselves therefore to God. Resist the devil, and he will flee from you. Draw nigh to God, and he will draw nigh to you. Cleanse your hands, ye sinners; and purify your hearts, ye double minded. (James 4:7-8)

Likewise, ye wives, be in subjection to your own husbands; that, if any obey not the word, they also may without the word be won by the conversation of the wives; Likewise, ye husbands, dwell with them according to knowledge, giving honour unto the wife, as unto the weaker vessel, and as being heirs together of the grace of life; that your prayers be not hindered. 1 Peter 3:1, 7).

The Lord knoweth how to deliver the godly out of temptations, and to reserve the unjust unto the day of judgment to be punished: (2 Peter 2:9)

He that loveth not knoweth not God; for God is love. (1 John 4:8)

## Appendix E

### CHOSEN PEOPLE AND THE COVENANT

**THE EXODUS & COVENANT:** The Israelis arrived in the Sinai peninsula three months after the night of their departure from Egypt. After breaking camp, they came to the base of Mt. Sinai and set up camp there. Moses climbed the rugged mountain to meet with God, and from somewhere in the mountain God called to him and said, "Give these instructions to the people of Israel. Tell them you have seen what I did to the Egyptians, and how I brought you to myself. If you will obey me and keep your part of my contract with you, you shall be my own little flock from among all the nations of the earth; for all the earth is mine. And you shall be a kingdom of priests to God, a holy nation."

Moses returned from the mountain and called together the leaders of the people and told them what the Lord had said. They all responded in unison, We will certainly do everything he asks of us. Moses reported the words of the people to the Lord. Then he said to Moses, I am going to come to you in the form of a dark cloud, so that the people themselves can hear me when I talk with you, and then they will always believe you.

Go down now and see that the people are ready for my visit. Sanctify them today and tomorrow, and have them wash their clothes. Then, the day after tomorrow, I will come down upon Mt. Sinai as all the people watch. Set boundary lines and tell them, Do not go up into the mountain, or even touch its boundaries; whoever does shall die. Stay away from the mountain entirely until you hear a ram's horn sounding one long blast; then gather at the foot of the mountain!

So Moses went down to the people and sanctified them. He told them, Get ready for God's appearance two days from now. On the morning of the third day there was a terrific thunder and lightning storm, and a huge cloud came down upon the mountain, and there was a long, loud

blast as from a ram's horn; and all the people trembled. Moses led them out from the camp to meet God, and they stood at the foot of the mountain. All Mt. Sinai was covered with smoke because Jehovah descended upon it in the form of fire; the smoke billowed into the sky as from a furnace, and the whole mountain shook with a violent earthquake.

So the Lord came down upon the top of Mt. Sinai and called Moses up to the top of the mountain, and Moses ascended to God. But the Lord told Moses, Go back down and warn the people not to cross the boundaries. They must not come up here to try to see God, for if they do, many of them will die. Even the priests on duty must sanctify themselves, or else I will destroy them.

But the people won't come up into the mountain! Moses protested. You told them not to! You told me to set boundaries around the mountain, and to declare it off limits because it is reserved for God.

But Jehovah said, Go down, and bring Aaron back with you, and don't let the priests and the people break across the boundaries to try to come up here, or I will punish them. So Moses went down to the people and told them what God had said. Then God issued this edict:

I am Jehovah your God who liberated you from your slavery in Egypt. You may worship no other god than me.

You shall not make yourselves any idols: no images of animals, birds, or fish.

You must never bow or worship it in any way; for I, the Lord your God, am very possessive. I will not share your affection with any other god! And when I punish people for their sins, the punishment continues upon the children, grandchildren, and great-grandchildren of those who hate me; but,

I lavish my love upon thousands of those who love me and obey my commandments.

You shall not use the name of Jehovah your God irreverently, nor use it to swear to a falsehood. You will not escape punishment if you do.

Remember to observe the Sabbath as a holy day.

Six days a week are for your daily duties and your regular work, but the seventh day is a day of Sabbath rest before the Lord your God. On that day you are to do no work of any kind, nor shall your son, daughter, or slaves--whether men or women--or your cattle or your house guests. For in six days the Lord made the heaven, earth, and sea, and everything in them, and rested the seventh day; so he blessed the Sabbath day and set it aside for rest.

Honor your father and mother, that you may have a long, good life in the land the Lord your God will give you.

You must not murder.

You must not commit adultery.

You must not steal.

You must not lie.

You must not be envious of your neighbor's house, or want to sleep with his wife, or want to own his slaves, oxen, donkeys, or anything else he has.

All the people saw the lightning and the smoke billowing from the mountain, and heard the thunder and the long, frightening trumpet blast; and they stood at a distance, shaking with fear. They said to Moses, You tell us what God says and we will obey, but don't let God speak directly to us, or it will kill us. Don't be afraid, Moses told them, for God has come in this way to show you his awesome power, so that from now on you will be afraid to sin against him!

As the people stood in the distance, Moses entered into the deep darkness where God was. And the Lord told Moses to be his spokesman to the people of Israel. You are witnesses to the fact that I have made known my will to you from heaven. Remember, you must not make or worship idols made of silver or gold or of anything else! The altars you make for me must be simple altars of earth. Offer upon them your sacrifices to me--your burnt offerings and peace offerings of sheep and oxen. Build altars only where I tell you to, and I will come and bless you there. (From Exodus 19, 20 LVB).

GOD'S WRATH: For I am the Lord your God who brought you out of the land of Egypt, so that

you would be slaves no longer; I have broken your chains so that you can walk with dignity. But if you will not listen to me or obey me, but reject my laws, this is what I will do to you: I will punish you with sudden terrors and panic, and with tuberculosis and burning fever; your eyes shall be consumed and your life shall ebb away; you will sow your crops in vain, for your enemies will eat them. I will set my face against you and you will flee before your attackers; those who hate you will rule you; you will even run when no one is chasing you! And if you still disobey me, I will punish you seven times more severely for your sins. (Leviticus 26:13-18 LVB).

COVENANT WITH GOD: The Lord said to Abraham, Leave your own country, your kinsmen, and your father's house, and go to a country that I will show you. I will make you into a great nation. (From Deuteronomy 7:6):

CHOSEN BY GOD: PROMISE IS NOT WITHOUT DUTY: <sup>7</sup>The Lord did not set his love upon you, nor choose you, because ye were more in number than any people; for ye were the fewest of all people: <sup>8</sup>But because the Lord loved you, and because he would keep the oath which he had sworn unto your fathers, hath the Lord brought you out with a mighty hand, and redeemed you out of the house of bondmen, from the hand of Pharaoh king of Egypt. <sup>9</sup>Know therefore that the Lord thy God, he is God, the faithful God, which keepeth covenant and mercy with them that love him and keep his commandments to a thousand generations; <sup>10</sup>And repayeth them that hate him to their face, to destroy them: he will not be slack to him that hateth him, he will repay him to his face. <sup>11</sup>Thou shalt therefore keep the commandments, and the statutes, and the judgments, which I command thee this day, to do them. <sup>12</sup>Wherefore it shall come to pass, if ye hearken to these judgments, and keep, and do them, that the Lord thy God shall keep unto thee the covenant and the mercy which he swore unto thy fathers: <sup>13</sup>And he will love thee, and bless thee, and multiply thee: he will also bless the fruit of thy womb, and the fruit of thy land, thy corn, and thy wine, and thine oil, the increase of thy kine, and the flocks of thy

sheep, in the land which he swore unto thy fathers to give thee. <sup>14</sup>Thou shalt be blessed above all people: there shall not be male or female barren among you, or among your cattle. <sup>15</sup>And the Lord will take away from thee all sickness, and will put none of the evil diseases of Egypt, which thou knowest, upon thee; but will lay them upon all them that hate thee. (Deuteronomy 7:7-15).

ISRAEL, LISTEN! Today you are to cross the Jordan River and begin to dispossess the nations on the other side. Those nations are much greater and more powerful than you are! But the Lord your God will go before you to destroy them so that you will quickly conquer them and drive them out.

Then, when the Lord has done this for you, don't say to yourselves, The Lord has helped us because we are so good! No, it is because of the wickedness of the other nations that he is doing it. It is not at all because you are such fine, upright people that the Lord will drive them out from before you! I say it again, it is only because of the wickedness of the other nations, and because of his promises to your ancestors, Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob, that he will do it. I say it yet again: Jehovah your God is not giving you this good land because you are good, for you are not--you are a wicked, stubborn people.

Don't you remember how continually angry you made the Lord your God out in the wilderness, from the day you left Egypt until now? For all this time you have constantly rebelled against him. He was ready to destroy you. I was on the mountain at the time, receiving the stone tablets with the laws inscribed upon them. He had spoken from the fire-covered mountain while the people had watched below. He told me to go down quickly because the people I had led out of Egypt had defiled themselves, quickly turning away from the laws of God, and had made an idol from molten metal. Let me alone that I may destroy this evil, stubborn people, the Lord told me, and I will blot out their name from under heaven, and I will make a mighty nation of you, mightier and greater than they are.

I came down from the burning mountain, holding in my hands the two tablets inscribed with the

laws of God. There below me I could see the calf you had made in your terrible sin against the Lord your God. How quickly you turned away from him! I lifted the tablets high above my head and dashed them to the ground! I smashed them before your eyes! How I feared for you--for the Lord was ready to destroy you. I took your sin--the calf you had made--and burned it and ground it into fine dust, and threw it into the stream that cascaded out of the mountain. Again and again and yet again you rebelled and you refused to obey him.

Yes, you have been rebellious against the Lord from the first day I knew you. That is why I fell down before him. I prayed to him, O Lord God, don't destroy your own people. They are your inheritance saved from Egypt by your mighty power and glorious strength. Don't notice the rebellion and stubbornness of these people, but remember instead your promises to your servants Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob. Oh, please overlook the awful wickedness and sin of these people. For if you destroy them the Egyptians will say, It is because the Lord wasn't able to bring them to the land he promised them, or He destroyed them because he hated them: he brought them into the wilderness to slay them. They are your people and your inheritance which you brought from Egypt by your great power and your mighty arm. (From Deuteronomy 9 LVB).

**REBELLIOUS CONDUCT:** And Moses with the elders of Israel commanded the people, saying, Keep all the commandments which I command you this day. And Moses charged the people the same day, saying, Cursed be the man that maketh any graven or molten image, an abomination unto the Lord, the work of the hands of the craftsman, and putteth it in a secret place. Cursed be he that setteth light by his father or his mother. Cursed be he that removeth his neighbour's landmark. Cursed be he that maketh the blind to wander out of the way. Cursed be he that perverteth the judgment of the stranger, fatherless, and widow. Cursed be he that lieth with his father's wife; because he uncovereth his father's skirt. Cursed be he that lieth with any manner of beast. Cursed be he that lieth with his sister, the daughter of his

father, or the daughter of his mother. Cursed be he that lieth with his mother in law. Cursed be he that smiteth his neighbour secretly. Cursed be he that taketh reward to slay an innocent person. Cursed be he that confirmeth not all the words of this law to do them. And all the people shall say, Amen. (From Deuteronomy 27:1, 11, 15-26).

Keep therefore the words of this covenant, and do them, that ye may prosper in all that ye do. Ye stand this day all of you before the Lord your God; your captains of your tribes, your elders, and your officers, with all the men of Israel, Your little ones, your wives, and thy stranger that is in thy camp, from the hewer of thy wood unto the drawer of thy water: That thou shouldest enter into covenant with the Lord thy God, and into his oath, which the Lord thy God maketh with thee this day: That he may establish thee to day for a people unto himself, and that he may be unto thee a God, as he hath said unto thee, and as he hath sworn unto thy fathers, to Abraham, to Isaac, and to Jacob. Neither with you only do I make this covenant and this oath; But with him that standeth here with us this day before the Lord our God, and also with him that is not here with us this day: (Deuteronomy 29:9-15).

See now that I, even I, am he, and there is no god beside me; I kill and I make alive; I wound and I heal; and there is none that can deliver out of my hand. Deuteronomy 32:39 RSV

For the children of Israel walked forty years in the wilderness, till all the people that were men of war, which came out of Egypt, were consumed, because they obeyed not the voice of the Lord: unto whom the Lord sware that he would not shew them the land, which the Lord sware unto their fathers that he would give us, a land that floweth with milk and honey. (Joshua 5:6).

<sup>47</sup>The Lord liveth; and blessed be my rock; and exalted be the God of the rock of my salvation.

<sup>48</sup>It is God that avengeth me, and that bringeth down the people under me. <sup>49</sup>And that bringeth me forth from mine enemies: thou also hast lifted

me up on high above them that rose up against me: thou hast delivered me from the violent man.<sup>50</sup> Therefore I will give thanks unto thee, O Lord, among the heathen, and I will sing praises unto thy name. <sup>51</sup>He is the tower of salvation for his king: and sheweth mercy to his anointed, unto David, and to his seed for evermore. (2 Samuel 22:47-51).

Blessed be the Lord, that hath given rest unto his people Israel, according to all that he promised: there hath not failed one word of all his good promise, which he promised by the hand of Moses his servant. (1 Kings 8:56).

At that time Rezin king of Syria recovered Elath to Syria, and drove the Jews from Elath; and the Syrians came to Elath, and dwelt there, unto this day. (2 Kings 16:6 ASV).

SUFFERING: And the king sent, and they gathered unto him all the elders of Judah and of Jerusalem. And the king went up into the house of the Lord, and all the men of Judah and all the inhabitants of Jerusalem with him, and the priests, and the prophets, and all the people, both small and great: and he read in their ears all the words of the book of the covenant which was found in the house of the Lord. And the king stood by a pillar, and made a covenant before the Lord, to walk after the Lord, and to keep his commandments and his testimonies and his statutes with all their heart and all their soul, to perform the words of this covenant that were written in this book. And all the people stood to the covenant. (2 Kings 23:1-3).

And they entered into a covenant to seek the Lord God of their fathers with all their heart and with all their soul; (2 Chronicles 15:12).

If they obey and serve him, they shall spend their days in prosperity, and their years in pleasures. (Job 36:11).

CHOSEN PEOPLE: Blessed is the nation whose God is the Lord; and the people whom he hath chosen for his own inheritance. (Psalms 33:12).

Come and see the marvels of God, his awesome deeds for the children of Adam: (Psalms 66:5 NJB).

I will say of the Lord, He is my refuge and my fortress: my God; in him will I trust. Surely he shall deliver thee from the snare of the fowler, and from the noisome pestilence. (Psalms 91:2-3).

Thy kingdom is an everlasting kingdom, and thy dominion endureth throughout all generations. (Psalms 145:13).

Therefore the Lord waits to be gracious to you; therefore he exalts himself to show mercy to you. For the Lord is a God of justice; blessed are all those who wait for him. (Isaiah 30:18 RSV).

And they shall fight against thee; but they shall not prevail against thee; for I am with thee, saith the Lord, to deliver thee. (Jeremiah 1:19).

Heal me, O Lord, and I shall be healed; save me, and I shall be saved: for thou art my praise. (Jeremiah 17:14)

For I will restore health unto thee, and I will heal thee of thy wounds, saith the Lord; (Jeremiah 30:17a)

<sup>24</sup>For I will take you from among the heathen, and gather you out of all countries, and will bring you into your own land. <sup>25</sup>Then will I sprinkle clean water upon you, and ye shall be clean: from all your filthiness, and from all your idols, will I cleanse you. <sup>26</sup>A new heart also will I give you, and a new spirit will I put within you: and I will take away the stony heart out of your flesh, and I will give you an heart of flesh. <sup>27</sup>And I will put my spirit within you, and cause you to walk in my statutes, and ye shall keep my judgments, and do them. (Ezekiel 36:24-27).

WHAT ARE OUR NEEDS?: <sup>6</sup>But thou, when thou prayest, enter into thy closet, and when thou hast shut thy door, pray to thy Father which is in secret; and thy Father which seeth in secret shall

reward thee openly.<sup>7</sup> But when ye pray, use not vain repetitions, as the heathen do: for they think that they shall be heard for their much speaking.<sup>8</sup> Be not ye therefore like unto them: for your Father knoweth what things ye have need of, before ye ask him. (Matthew 6:6-8)

MESSIAH FIRST TO THE JEWS: These twelve Jesus sent forth, and commanded them, saying, Go not into the way of the Gentiles, and into any city of the Samaritans enter ye not: But go rather to the lost sheep of the house of Israel. And as ye go, preach, saying, The kingdom of heaven is at hand. Matthew 10:5-7).

And when (Jesus) was come into his own country, he taught them in their synagogue, insomuch that they were astonished, and said, Whence hath this man this wisdom, and these mighty works? Is not this the carpenter's son? is not his mother called Mary? and his brethren, James, and Joseph, and Simon, and Judas? And his sisters, are they not all with us? Whence then hath this man all these things? And they were offended in him. But Jesus said unto them, A prophet is not without honour, save in his own country, and in his own house. Matthew 13:54-57).

Jerusalem, Jerusalem, you that kill the prophets and stone those who are sent to you! How often have I longed to gather your children together, as a hen gathers her chicks under her wings, and you refused! Look! Your house will be deserted, for, I promise, you shall not see me any more until you are saying: Blessed is he who is coming in the name of the Lord! (Matthew 23:37-39 NJB)

And they brought young children to him, that he should touch them: and his disciples rebuked those that brought them. <sup>14</sup>But when Jesus saw it, he was much displeased, and said unto them, Suffer the little children to come unto me, and forbid them not: for of such is the kingdom of God. <sup>15</sup>Verily I say unto you, Whosoever shall not receive the kingdom of God as a little child, he shall not enter therein. <sup>16</sup>And he took them up in his arms, put his hands upon them, and blessed them. (Mark 10:13-16)

GOD PROMISES TO MEET OUR NEEDS: Therefore I say unto you, What things soever ye desire, when ye pray, believe that ye receive them, and ye shall have them. (Mark 11:24)

“The life is more than meat, and the body is more than raiment. Consider the ravens: for they neither sow nor reap; which neither have storehouse nor barn; and God feedeth them: how much more are ye better than the fowls?” (Luke 12:23-24).

LAMENT FOR JERUSALEM: As he drew near and came in sight of the city he shed tears over it and said, If you too had only recognised on this day the way to peace! But in fact it is hidden from your eyes! Yes, a time is coming when your enemies will raise fortifications all round you, when they will encircle you and hem you in on every side; they will dash you and the children inside your walls to the ground; they will leave not one stone standing on another within you, because you did not recognise the moment of your visitation. Luke 19:40-44 NJB).

Thus it is written, and thus it behooved Christ to suffer, and to rise from the dead the third day: And that repentance and remission of sins should be preached in his name among all nations, beginning at Jerusalem. Luke 24:46-47).

In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God. The same was in the beginning with God. All things were made by him; and without him was not any thing made that was made. In him was life; and the life was the light of men. He was in the world, and the world was made by him, and the world knew him not. He came unto his own, and his own received him not. But as many as received him, to them gave he power to become the sons of God, even to them that believe on his name: Which were born, not of blood, nor of the will of the flesh, nor of the will of man, but of God. (John 1:1-4, 10-13).

Let not your heart be troubled: ye believe in God, believe also in me. In my Father's house are many mansions: if it were not so, I would have told you. I go to prepare a place for you. And if I go and



prepare a place for you, I will come again, and receive you unto myself; that where I am, there ye may be also. (John 14:1-3).

The God of Abraham, and of Isaac, and of Jacob, the God of our fathers, hath glorified his Son Jesus; whom ye delivered up, and denied him in the presence of Pilate, when he was determined to let him go. But ye denied the Holy One and the Just, and desired a murderer to be granted unto you; And killed the Prince of life, whom God hath raised from the dead; whereof we are witnesses. (Acts 3:13-15).

Mission to the Jews: Ye are the children of the prophets, and of the covenant which God made with our fathers, saying unto Abraham, And in thy seed shall all the kindreds of the earth be blessed. Unto you first God, having raised up his Son Jesus, sent him to bless you, in turning away every one of you from his iniquities. (Acts 3:25-26).

But when the Jews saw the multitudes, they were filled with envy, and spake against those things which were spoken by Paul, contradicting and blaspheming. Then Paul and Barnabas waxed bold, and said, It was necessary that the word of God should first have been spoken to you: but seeing ye put it from you, and judge yourselves unworthy of everlasting life, lo, we turn to the Gentiles. For so hath the Lord commanded us, saying, I have set thee to be a light of the Gentiles, that thou shouldest be for salvation unto the ends of the earth. And when the Gentiles heard this, they were glad, and glorified the word of the Lord: and as many as were ordained to eternal life believed. And the word of the Lord was published throughout all the region. (Acts 13:45-49).

For the wages of sin is death; but the gift of God is eternal life through Jesus Christ our Lord. (Romans 6:23).

It is reported commonly that there is fornication among you, and such fornication as is not so much as named among the Gentiles, that one should have his father's wife. And ye are puffed up, and have not rather mourned, that he that hath done

this deed might be taken away from among you. For I verily, as absent in body, but present in spirit, have judged already, as though I were present, concerning him that hath so done this deed, In the name of our Lord Jesus Christ, when ye are gathered together, and my spirit, with the power of our Lord Jesus Christ, To deliver such an one unto Satan for the destruction of the flesh, that the spirit may be saved in the day of the Lord Jesus. Your glorying is not good. Know ye not that a little leaven leaveneth the whole lump? Purge out therefore the old leaven, that ye may be a new lump, as ye are unleavened. For even Christ our passover is sacrificed for us: (1 Corinthians 5:1-7).

Moreover, brethren, I would not that ye should be ignorant, how that all our fathers were under the cloud, and all passed through the sea; And were all baptized unto Moses in the cloud and in the sea; And did all eat the same spiritual meat; And did all drink the same spiritual drink: for they drank of that spiritual Rock that followed them: and that Rock was Christ. But with many of them God was not well pleased: for they were overthrown in the wilderness. (1 Corinthians 10:1-5).

There is a sin unto death: I do not say that he shall pray for it. (1 John 5:16b). If one does not repent of his sins, and continues in this sin, he could be chastened. The Apostle Paul's words: Wherefore whosoever shall eat this bread, and drink this cup of the Lord, unworthily, shall be guilty of the body and blood of the Lord. But let a man examine himself, and so let him eat of that bread, and drink of that cup. For he that eateth and drinketh unworthily, eateth and drinketh damnation to himself, not discerning the Lord's body. For this cause many are weak and sickly among you, and many sleep. (1 Cor. 11:27-30).

<sup>55</sup>O death, where is thy sting? O grave, where is thy victory? <sup>56</sup>The sting of death is sin; and the strength of sin is the law. But thanks be to God, which giveth us the victory through our Lord Jesus Christ. (1 Corinthians 15:55-57)

PRESENT DAY SUFFERING- HEALTH: <sup>5b</sup>I will not boast about myself, except about my

weaknesses...<sup>7</sup>To keep me from becoming conceited because of these surpassingly great revelations, there was given me a thorn in my flesh, a messenger of Satan, to torment me. <sup>8</sup>Three times I pleaded with the Lord to take it away from me. <sup>9</sup>But He said to me, "My grace is sufficient for you, for my power is made perfect in weakness." <sup>10</sup>Therefore I will boast all the more gladly about my weaknesses, so that Christ's power may rest on me. <sup>11</sup>That is why, for Christ's sake, I delight in weak-nesses, in insults, in hardships, in persecutions, in difficulties. For when I am weak, then I am strong. (2 Corinthians 12:5b, 7-11 NIV)

For by grace are ye saved through faith; and that not of yourselves: it is the gift of God: Not of works, lest any man should boast. (Ephesians 2:8-9).

<sup>13a</sup>Is any among you afflicted? let him pray. <sup>14</sup>Is any sick among you? let him call for the elders of the church; and let them pray over him, anointing him with oil in the name of the Lord: <sup>15</sup>And the prayer of faith shall save the sick, and the Lord shall raise him up; and if he have committed sins, they shall be forgiven him. <sup>16</sup>Confess your faults one to another, and pray one for another, that ye may be healed. The effectual fervent prayer of a righteous man availeth much. (James 5:13a-16)

<sup>14</sup>And this is the confidence that we have in him, that, if we ask any thing according to his will, he heareth us: <sup>15</sup> And if we know that he hear us, whatsoever we ask, we know that we have the petitions that we desired of him. (1 John 5:14-15)

# Outline

## PART I IN THE BEGINNING

### CHAPTER 1. THE BREATH OF LIFE

- Genesis 1:1-2:3
- Blind Faith?
- Bill and Bob- a Dialogue.
- They Cannot Both Be Right.
- The Creation Account.
- Dinosaur Sketches.
- Evolution Theory.
- Teaching Evolution.
- Evolution Text.
- A Faith the Facts Fit.

### CHAPTER 2. OUT OF EVE, OUT OF AFRICA

- Luke 3:23-36a.
- Out of Eve.
- Migration Map.
- Out-of-Ararat.
- Out-of-Africa.
- Scientific Alternatives to Out-of-Africa.
- Missing Links.
- Nebraska Man.
- Creation Science and “Out-of-Africa.”
- Further out-of-Ararat.
- Genesis 10.
- Cain’s Wife.
- Logistics of Noah’s Flood.
- Sunken Cities.

### CHAPTER 3. CAN THE BIBLE AND SCIENCE COMPROMISE?

- Jude 1:14-20.
- Compromise.
- Opposites that Oppose.
- *The Origin of Life* (textbook).
- Teaching about Evolution (Instructional Text).
- Pennsylvania Department of Education.
- Kansas Board of Education.
- Hawaii Board of Education.
- A “Delicate Flower.”
- Neanderthal Video (made for TV).
- Walking with Dinosaurs (TV movie).

- Compromise: Does That Mean the Bible Is Wrong.
- Hybrids.
- Questions and Theories about Creation.
- About God.
- A Call to Parents.

## PART II THE MESSIAH

### CHAPTER 4. WAS A MESSIAH PROMISED?

- Isaiah 46:8-13.
- A perfect World.
- Something Went Wrong.
- Why Not Tell Us Everything?
- Other Messianic Promises.
- Promises.
- Chosen by God: Promise is not Without Duty.
- Deuteronomy 7:7-15.
- Commandments & Obedience.
- Deliverance from Enemies.

### CHAPTER 5. IS JESUS CHRIST THE MESSIAH?

- Scripture References: Prophecy and Fulfillment.
- Lineage of the Messiah.

## PART III THE EFFECT OF A CREATOR GOD ON OUR DAILY LIVES

### CHAPTER 6. GOD’S VIEW: DOES IT MATTER WHAT WE BELIEVE?

- Quote: Did God Create “Other” People to Condemn Them?
- What Are the Major Religions?
- Non-Literal Genesis Position.
- Prove the Existence of God, and I Will Believe.
- What Are We to Believe and Do?
- Seek Only the Bible for Doctrine.
- Why Believe in the Messiah (What’s in it for Me)?
- Do you just have to do the best you can?
- God’s Way.

## CHAPTER 7. ABORTION: WHICH CHILDREN SHOULD LIVE?

- What Exactly is Abortion, and Why the Conflict?
- The World View.
- What Does God Say?
- A Matter of Convenience.
- How they Kill the Babies.
- Church-Based Counseling.
- The Adoption Option.
- A Glimmer of Hope.
- What Can You Do?
- New Testament View.

## CHAPTER 8. HOMOSEXUALITY: ADAM AND EVE, OR ADAM AND STEVE?

- Leviticus 18:22, 24-25.
- New World View of Homosexuality.
- Old World View.
- Biblical View.
- Sodom and Gomorrah.
- Genesis 19.
- Is It Right Or Wrong?
- Intolerance.
- Intolerance: Crime & Punishment.
- What To Do?
- Conclusion: Do not Bash (Judge) Anyone.

## CHAPTER 9. MARRIAGE & DIVORCE: TILL DEATH DO US PART

- Genesis 2:18, 21-24.
- Why Marriage?
- Proper Marital Relationships.
- Leviticus 20:11-21.
- Why Divorce?
- What Constitutes Adultery?
- Mark 10:10-12.
- What Is Lust?
- Lust Research.
- How to Defeat Lust.

## CHAPTER 10. RACISM AND PREJUDICE

- Is Racism “Christian-Like?”
- Mock Prayer.
- How many skin colors are there?
- Color chart.

- So Where Did All the “Shades” Come From?
- Curse of Ham.
- Genesis 9:20-27.
- More Sin & Confounded Language.
- Genesis 11:1-9.
- The Days of Peleg.
- If Only One Skin Color, How Many Races?
- Science and Racism.
- Prejudice.
- Hate Groups.
- Love Groups and Ending Racism.

## **PART IV WHERE ARE WE GOING FROM HERE?**

### CHAPTER 11. ETERNITY: IS THERE AN AFTERLIFE?

- Psalms 103:17-19.
- Eternal Life.
- There Is a Heaven.
- Redemption.
- Where is God; Where is heaven?
- Isaiah 30:18-19.
- Salvation and the Messiah.
- Heaven is Physical and Joyous.
- Revelation 21-22.
- A Grand promise- New Bodies
- Who May Enter into Heaven?
- John 10:24-30.
- Heaven is Not Open to Everyone.
- Luke 13:24-28.
- Is There a Literal Hell?
- Witness of the Holy Angels.
- How Do You Get into Heaven?

### CHAPTER 12 SHOULD CHURCHES KEEP UP WITH THE TIMES?

- Psalms 119:89-90, 160.
- God Does Not Change: How Can We?
- God Is Absolute.
- God’s Purpose.
- Satan’s Deception and First Sin.
- Why Does the Church Change?
- Man’s Self-Righteousness.
- The Ecumenical Movement.

- Endorsement of Sexual Sin.
- Divorce and the Church.
- Modern Science and the Church.
- Separation of Church and State.
- Conclusion.

#### CHAPTER 13. THE COVENANT AND PROMISES

- Chosen People.
- Covenant with God.
- Exodus 19,20.
- God Promises to Meet Our Needs.
- What Are Our Needs?
- Covenant: Messiah First to the Jews.

#### CHAPTER 14. WHY HAVE GOD'S PEOPLE SUFFERED?

- Rebellious Conduct.
- Deuteronomy 9.
- God's Wrath.
- Rejection of the Messiah.

### **Recommended Reading**

Baugh, Carl, and Wilson, Clifford. *Footprints and the Sands of Time*. Oklahoma City, OK, Hearthstone Publishing, Ltd. 1992 (Scientific evidence that man and dinosaurs walked the earth together.)

Chittick, Donald E., Ph.D., *The Puzzle of Ancient Man*, Tualatin, Oregon, Creation Compass, 1997. (Early mankind was much more advanced than we could imagine.)

Epp, Theodore, *Why Do Christians Suffer?* Lincoln, Nebraska, Back to the Bible Publications, 1970.

Gitt, Werner, Prof-Dr., *In the Beginning Was Information*, Bielefeld, Germany, CLV. 1997 English version.

Ham, Ken, *The Great Dinosaur Mystery*, Green Forest, Arkansas, Master Books, 1998.

Ham, Ken, *Genesis and the Decay of the Nations*, Green Forest, Arkansas, Master Books, 1991.

Ham, Ken, *The Lie Evolution*, Green Forest, Arkansas, Master Books, 1987.

Ham, Ken, *Did Adam Have a Belly Button?* Green Forest, Arkansas, Master Books, 1999. (Answers to 172 tough questions.)

Ham, Ken, Snelling, Andrew, Wieland, Carl, *The Answers Book*, Green Forest, Arkansas,, Master Books, 1990. (Answers to the 12 most asked questions on Genesis and creation/evolution.)

LaHaye, Tim, *Revelation Unveiled*, Grand Rapids, Michigan, Zondervan Publishing House, 1999

- Suffering.
- Present Day Suffering- The Middle east.
- Present Day Suffering- Health.
- Why Won't He Heal Us?
- "Good" Suffering.
- Section Conclusion.

#### **PART V DEPART IN PEACE**

#### CHAPTER 15. SATAN: THE ENEMY

- The Personality of Satan.
- Victory over Satan.

#### CHAPTER 16. SUMMARY & CONCLUSION

- Biblical Summary.
- Creation vs. Evolution.
- Salvation and the Messiah.
- How We Live.
- Alcohol "for Medicinal Use."
- Closing.

Lerch, Harold, Sr. P.E., *Did God Really Say That?*, Fairfax, Virginia, Xulon Press, 2002.

Morris, Henry, Ph.D., *The Remarkable Birth of Planet Earth*, San Diego, California, Creation-Life Publishers, 1972.

Morris, John, Ph.D., *The Young Earth*, Green Forest, Arkansas, Master Books, 1994.

Parker, Gary, Ph.D., *Creation Facts of Life*, Colorado Springs, Colorado, Master Books, 1994.

Sarfati, Jonathan, Ph.D., *Refuting Evolution*, Green Forest, Arkansas, Master Books, 1999.

Creation Science Foundation Ltd., Snelling, Andrew D., Editor, *The Revised Quote Book*, Acacia Ridge DC, Queensland, Australia, Answers in Genesis, 1990.

## **Recommended Reading for Children**

*The Great Dinosaur Mystery and the Bible*, Paul S. Taylor, Accent Books, PO Box 15337, Denver, CO 80215, copyright 1987, 1989.

From Answers in Genesis, published by Master Books

A is for Adam

The Creation

The Caring Creator

D is for Dinosaur

Dinosaurs by Design

Dry Bones and Other Fossils

God the Creator

Skeletons in your Closet

Answers in Genesis, PO Box 6330, Florence, KY 41022 USA

Answers in Genesis, PO Box 6302, Acacia Ridge DC, Qld 4110 Australia

Answers in Genesis, PO Box 5262, Leicester LE2 3XU, United Kingdom

Answers in Genesis, PO Box 39005, Howick, Auckland, New Zealand

Answers in Gen., 5-420 Erb St. W., Suite 213, Waterloo, Ontario N2L 6K6 Canada

U.S orders 1-800-778-3390.

Web site [www.answersingenesis.org](http://www.answersingenesis.org)



# When will the Messiah come? Has He come already? Would you know Him?

When Satan deceived Eve in the Garden of Eden, God's creation came under the judgment of death. Almighty God came up with a plan for His creation to defeat death. He chose His people and made a covenant (promise) with them. That promise was twofold: to defeat death by way of a Redeemer, and to defeat their enemies by way of a conqueror, the Messiah.

Why should we believe the Bible is true? Doesn't science disprove the biblical creation account? Then why should we believe any Messiah hype? Was the talk of a Messiah a false hope?

This book is written for Jews who want to learn the truth about the foundations that bind their faith, beginning with the creation, and how beliefs about our origins should affect our daily lives. Scripture from the Hebrew Bible is included within the text to help make the biblical integration most effective.

The author explains why scientific evidence supports biblical creation and a young earth. More importantly, he upholds the accuracy of the biblical messianic prophecies—that God has made a plan for redemption and for conquering the enemies of Israel.



**Harold Lerch, Sr.**, is a graduate of the Pennsylvania State University, College of Engineering, and is a professional engineer working in construction administration and management for a major private-industry corporation. Formerly, he was special projects manager for the same corporation, specializing in food manufacturing and material handling.

Harold and his wife of over thirty years, Jeanne, reside near Middleburg, Pennsylvania. Their grown children, Harold, Jr., and Joanne, have blessed them with five grandchildren: Mariah, Christian, Drew, Kylee, and Shelly.

Harold is the author of *Did God Really Say That?* and is founder of Word to the World Ministries, an association that writes, publishes, and distributes informative, biblically based resources at no cost.